BICENTENNIAL REFLECTIONS

FRANKLIN COUNTY BICENTENNIAL COMMISSION

Table of Contents

Published by the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission

Preface

The year 1986 is one of celebration for the people of Franklin County. Although this is the two-hundredth anniversary of the creation of the political entity known as Franklin County, which was formed from Bedford and Henry counties, it is the people who have directed Franklin's course and molded its future to bring us to this delightful year. The people of Franklin County are proud of their heritage for it is this heritage that has made possible those things we enjoy today. Our diversity has fostered strength, our industriousness and perserverance have fostered stamina, and our surrounding natural beauty has provided us a haven as a laboratory in which to apply those natural attributes that have resulted in our evolving as a people frequently referred to as "just good people."

Our progenitors first penetratd the wilderness to establish themselves on this frontier in the 1740s. From the East they came via the Warwick, Pigg River and Hickey's roads attempting to emulate and perpetuate the lifestyle to which they were accustomed. They established tobacco plantations and, if wealthy enough, brought a few slaves. Except for a rare few of affluence, the slaveholders found it necessary to work alongside their several slaves in order to eke out a living. Sharecroppers and tenant farmers would perpetuate this tradition even long after the Civil War. Such close relations fostered understanding, compassion, and cultural sharing that paved the way for more harmonious cultural relations during the otherwise turbulent desegregation years of America's mid-twentieth century.

From the North came the Germanic peoples, having recently sojourned in Pennsylvania but now passing south via the Great Wagon Road where they found northwestern Franklin County to their liking. Many of these were members of the Dunkard faith whose appearance was an outward sign of their deep religious convictions. They became good neighbors and exemplary farmers, with particular aptitudes for animal husbandry and as orchardists. Their ingenuity contributed significantly to bridging the gap between the lowland culture of the east and the highland culture of the west in Franklin County.

From the North would also come the Scotch-Irish by a similar route but having more recently arrived in America. They were anxious and impatient to become their own masters, to find cheap land, and to prove themselves, regardless of the odds in a new country. They conquered the rugged mountains by whatever means necessary and became small subsistence farmers, rugged woodsmen, and notorious moonshiners.

One hundred fifty years later from all directions have come the lake people of all racial, ethnic, and cultural backgrounds. Attracted by the natural beauty of the place and this even more recently enhanced by enormous man-made lakes offering unequaled recreational and residential opportunities, they have populated the shores of Smith Mountain Lake and secluded themselves in the quiet beauty of the mountains of southern Franklin County as well as nearby Philpott Lake. With them they brought new blood, new ways of thinking, and new lifestyles to Franklin County. Their contributions have been no less significant in their newfound homeland than those of the Germans, the English, and Scotch-Irish in making this county what it is and what we all enjoy today.

Indeed, it is a celebration of the people of Franklin County. In this publication we have tried to summarize some aspects of our history in a manner that all might better understand who we are and how we arrived as we are today on the threshold of the twenty-first century. Our authors are for the most part citizens of Franklin County along with a few guest authors who share with us an intimate knowledge of our history and a passionate love for Franklin County. For the most part, we are not professional writers: we have attempted, however, to share with you our knowledge and our love of Franklin County. Without doubt and despite our attempts to be as accurate as possible, errors will have been made. For these we sincerely apologize and trust that future research and scholarship will not only correct our mistakes but will further illuminate our rich historical legacy.

We do hope you will appreciate our efforts and that they will be rewarded with a renewed interest and an even greater pride in Franklin County. Together, we look forward to our third century of

"Progressing with Confidence
Remembering with Pride."

J. Francis Amos, M.D.
Chairman, Franklin County Bicentennial Commission

Franklin County Bicentennial Calendar of Events

January	1	First Franklin County Court
	5	Bicentennial Dress Sunday - All Churches
February	15	Bicentennial Square Dance
April	5	Booker T. Washington Birthday
	12	Great Country Five Miler *(Sponsors: Rocky Mount Jaycees, WNLB & Franklin County Recreation Department)*
	19	Black Teenage Pageant *(Sponsor: Pageants Unlimited)*
	26	Bicentennial Court Day
May	15	Franklin County High School Band Bicentennial Spring Concert
	17 & 18	Bicentennial Historical Tour of Franklin County
	26	Bicentennial Memorial Day Service
	29	Civic Club Dinner - Ferrum College
June	7	Franklin County Horse Show *(Sponsor: Sontag Ruritan Club)*
	16	Rocky Mount Fun Festival *(Sponsor: Franklin County Merchants and Businessmen's Association)*
	22	Bicentennial Ice Cream Social *Bicentennial Dress at Home of Mrs. Goldie Hodges, Glade Hill*
	23 - 29	*Moonshine Open Tennis Tournament* *(Courtesy: Franklin County Recreation Department)*
July	4	Bicentennial July 4th Celebration
	26	Blue Ridge Draft Horse and Mule Show *(Sponsor: Blue Ridge Institute, Ferrum College)*
	21-26	Franklin County Fair *(Sponsor: Franklin County Fair Association)*
August	9	Third Annual World Hunger Auction *(Sponsor: Area Churches of the Brethren)*
September	1-6	Bicentennial Focus Week
	6	Bicentennial Parade
	17,20,21,23,27	Bicentennial Drama
	20	Boones Mill Apple Festival *(Sponsor: Boones Mill Lion's Club)*
	27	Franklin County Sportsman Rendezvous *(Sponsor: Franklin County Recreation Department)*
	27 & 28	Bicentennial Historical Tour of Franklin County
	12	White Lightning Run (5K and 10K) *(Sponsors: Rocky Mount Rotary Club and Franklin County Recreation Department)*
	18	Lord's Acre Sale
	25	Blue Ridge Folklife Festival - Focus on Franklin County *(Sponsor: Blue Ridge Institute, Ferrum College)*
November	5	General Jubal Anderson Early Birthday
	29	Bicentennial Ball
	—	Jurors Choice Art Show Judging *(Sponsor: Rocky Mount Rotary Club)*
December	6	Franklin County Arts and Crafts Show *(Sponsor: Franklin County Chamber of Commerce)*
	31	Time Capsule Burial

Acknowledgement

I want to thank the following people for their immense assistance given me in the assimilation and preparation of this publication and all others who have contributed in any way toward this project. First of all I want to thank all contributors to the Franklin County Bicentennial for their generosity and public support which has made this publication and the Bicentennial celebration a reality. A list of these contributors is included so that you too can let them know you appreciate their magnanimous support. Likewise, I would like to thank the Franklin County Board of Supervisors for their financial support and personal commitment to the Bicentennial. Their commitment to the writing and publication of an official Bicentennial history of Franklin County is commendable. It is a most worthy project long overdue. The assistance provided by the Franklin County Administrator and his office staff is also much appreciated.

To all the authors who have contributed to this publication I want to express my sincere appreciation for the research, the time and the effort you have afforded us in the preparation of each article. Since none of us are professional writers, we most appreciate the efforts of Emily Salmon of Richmond who has copy-edited these manuscripts and to her and her husband John who have so graciously responded to our request to assist with the final preparation of these articles. Members of our Franklin County Bicentennial Commission are to be commended for their dedication to the overall planning and preparation for this and all other such activities scheduled throughout the year. A special thanks goes to members Mrs. Jeanne Bernard, Mr. Cyrus Dillon, Jr., Mrs. Nancy Pinckard, Mr. Mike Meeks, Mrs. Kathryn Shay and Mrs. Macie Woods who served as proof readers for this publication and Mrs. Elizabeth Webster who assisted with typing.

Particularly valuable assistance was provided by Ms. Linda Linnartz and Mr. Vaughan Webb of the Blue Ridge Institute of Ferrum College who have assisted greatly with the procurement and reproduction of pictures, assisted with layout and with the printing of the publication. We with to thank all who made their photos available for our photo collection project and to Mr. Wendell Brooks and Mr. Ford Cundiff for the loan of artifacts for this publication. Copies of the Franklin Chronicle were provided by Mr. Jim Jamison of Spinning Wheel Antiques. The Franklin County Chamber of Commerce has generously allowed us to reproduce the Franklin County Map with the kind assistance of Mr. Everette Hill of Superior Map Company. I especially want to recognize the assistance of Mrs. Dorothy Cundiff of the Franklin County Merchants and Businessmen's Association who has provided many pictures for this publication from her collection assembled over many years in publishing an annual photo documentation book of yesteryear in Franklin County. Kopy King of Rocky Mount has provided us with typeset and layout for this publication and Mrs. LouAlice Weddle in particular has been most helpful and forbearing with us in spite of the difficulties and endless revisions presented her and her staff. We wish also to acknowledge the Gurtner Printing Company of Roanoke for their kind assistance in printing the final manuscript.

I must point out the significant contributions to this project and the Bicentennial as a whole provided by Mrs. Deborah Trail and Mrs. Sarah Spitzer who have worked so hard to provide secretarial services to the Bicentennial Commission from its inception. Without their timely and continuing assistance the efficient operation of the Bicentennial Commission would not be possible.

To my wife Laquita and my ever present co-worker, I wish to say a very special thank you. She has labored day and night making arrangements, collecting materials, typing correspondence and volumes of manuscripts, making costumes, arranging displays, and all the while triageing the telephone and providing consultation and information. Without her help, her resourcefulness, and her toleration of frustration, and particularly of me, this project as well as many others pertinent to the Bicentennial would have suffered.

To all citizens of Franklin County and to all with roots or interest in this county, we thank you for your support. Without this support and your pride in Franklin County, our County would not be what we enjoy today. To each and every one, on behalf of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission, we say a hearty thank you and we look forward to your renewed interest and pride in Franklin County as we begin our third century.

J. Francis Amos, M.D.
Chairman, Franklin County Bicentennial Commission

Contributors

We wish to thank the following contributors who have made Franklin County's Bicentennial Celebration possible.

SPECIAL CATEGORY

Franklin County Board of Supervisors
A History of Franklin County, available 1990..... $50,000

Bicentennial Celebration 16,250

Town of Rocky Mount 1,000

Virginia Commission for the Arts 5,000

Virginia Foundation for the Humanities and Public Policy..... 10,000

Cooper Wood Products 5,000

PARTNER - $1,500

Roanoke Hospital Association
Lewis-Gale Hospital
MW Manufacturer
Family Physicians, Inc.
Burroughs Corporation
Drs. Barrett & Quioco
J.P. Stevens & Company, Inc.

PATRON - $1,000

Fleetwood Homes
First Virginia Bank-Franklin County
Holland-Duncan House
United Virginia Bank

SPONSOR - $750

Rocky Top Wood Preservers

CONTRIBUTOR - $500

Bristol Manufacturing Company
First National Bank of Rocky Mount
Ferrum College
Norfolk Southern Corporation
Willard Construction of Roanoke Valley, Inc.

SUPPORTER - $250

Eugene W. Akers, Inc.
Appalachian Power Company
Arrington Bussey Funeral Home
Clyde W. Bowles
Centel
Elliott's Pottery Shop
First National Bank - Ferrum
Kelly Vault Company
Marley Continental Homes
Meadow Spring Land & Realty
Special Equipment
The Kroger Company
The Lane Company

DONOR - $200

Anderson Auction Service
W.N. Angle Insurance Agency
W.C. Brown & Son, Insurance
Burlington Industries
Franklin Finance
Hubbard Sheet Metal
Mrs. N. Morris & Ms. Flora Morris

DONOR - $100

Anchor, Inc.
Angle Hardware
Angle's Shop, Inc.
Arrington Flowers
Bennett's Tire Service
Blue Ridge Talc Company, Inc.
C.T. Jamison's Septic Tank
Terry Cundiff Lumber
Cundiff Tractor & Equipment
Wm. H. Flannagan
Flowers by Jones
Franklin County Respiratory Rentals
Franklin Mobile Home Sales
Virgil Goode, Jr.
Guyer-Roberts Manufacturing Company
Ralph Kahn, M.D.
Kopy King
Leo Scott Cabinets
Rev. McKinley Hamilton
Ray Boone Accounting Company
Revco Foundation
Drs. Saxon, Angle, & Associates, P.C.
Turner's Building Company
Tuttle's Exxon
Woodmen of the World
Wolfe Medical Group
A.O. Woody, Jr.

BOOSTER - less than $100

Anderson & Dillon Oil
Dr. Lewis Coffey
Marvin Conner Home Improvements
Eitner's Corner Store
Harry F. Cox
Cathy Ford, DDS
Frank's Cafe
Gaye's Beauty Salon
Hodgesville Service Station
C.G. & Louise Holland
Guy Holley
Mrs. Mallie Latimer
Maxey's Interiors
McCall Insurance Agency
James & Dora Morris
Overfelt's Garage
Rocky Mount Ready Mix
Ruff's Antiques
Bernard W. Schutt, Pharmacist
Sears, Roebuck & Company
The Clock Shop
The Uttermost Company
Weaver Mirror Company
Pat's Hallmark Shop
Rocky Mount Supply Company
Shively Electrical Company

We wish to thank all who have and will supply in-kind donations toward the various Bicentennial events.

Franklin County Board of Supervisors
1986

Mr. Billie Robertson, Chairman	Blackwater District
Mr. Thurman E. Scott, Jr., Vice Chairman	Blue Ridge District
Mr. Homer Murrary	Boone District
Mr. John W. Booth, Jr.	Gills Creek District
Mr. Girardus Forry	Rocky Mount District
Mr. C. Noell Parcell	Snow Creek District
Mr. Miles W. Holland	Union Hall District

Constitutional Office Holders
of Franklin County

Mrs. Doris Brown	Treasurer
Mr. Clifford Hapgood	Commonwealth Attorney
Mr. Quint Overton	Sheriff
Mr. Ben Pinckard	Commissioner of Revenue
Mr. William Walker, Jr.	Clerk of Court

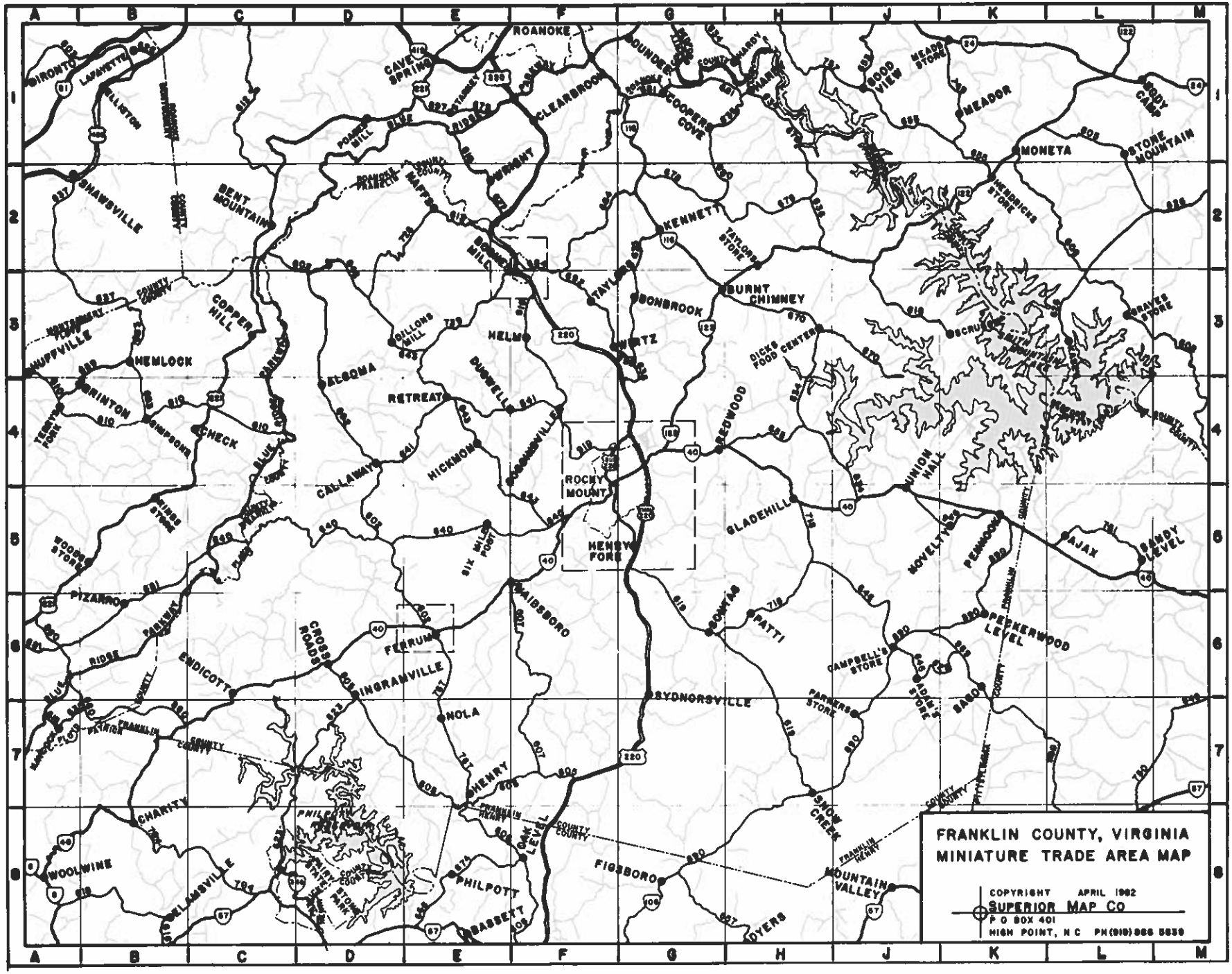
Members of
Franklin County Bicentennial Commission

Dr. J. Francis Amos, Chairman

Mrs. Mary Hopkins, V-Chm.
Mr. Roscoe Powell
Mr. Homer Murray
Mrs. Dorothy Cundiff
Mr. Marshall Flora
Mr. Cyrus Dillon, Jr.
Mr. J. Roderick Moore
Mr. T. Keister Greer
Mrs. Gertrude Mann

Mr. Mike Meeks, Treas.
Miss Geraldine Bell
Sen. Virgil Goode
Del. Willard Finney
Mrs. Joyce Jamison
Mrs. Macie Woods
Mrs. Paige Robertson
Rev. McKinley Hamilton
Mrs. Marion Ellis
Mrs. Nancy Pinckard

Mrs. Virginia Crook, Secretary
Dr. Frank Hurt
Mrs. Edith Sigmon
Mrs. Jeanne Bernard
Mrs. Maxine Simms
Miss Anne Carter Lee
Mrs. Kathryn Shay
Mrs. Elizabeth Webster
Mrs. Jerryanne Bier



Map Courtesy of Franklin County Chamber of Commerce

A Brief History of Franklin County

J. Francis Amos, M.D.

Franklin County was formed in 1786 from Bedford and Henry counties and named for Benjamin Franklin, then governor of Pennsylvania from where many settlers of western Franklin County had come. The county lies in the western piedmont with a diversified terrain ranging from the flatlands of the eastern part to the rugged peaks of the Blue Ridge as its western backbone.

Indians lived in the area of Franklin County as early as 10,000 B.C. and up until the time of Christ were primarily wandering hunters. For 2,000 years before the white man came they engaged in agriculture as well. By the 1600s the Indians of the area were of eastern Siouan stock and lived in small transient villages with nearby cleared fields used for raising corn, squash, and pumpkins. Evidence of Indian occupation was obvious when the settlers first came to the area in the 1740s although the Indians themselves had largely abandoned the area. Franklin County was transected from north to south by the Great Indian Warrior Path developed by the Iroquois and running from upstate New York to Georgia. On their way south to make war on the enemy Catawba of the Carolinas, the Iroquois would prey upon smaller villages along the way. Consequently, the local Siouan tribes were forced to abandon the area round 1700. Some moved first eastward to Mecklenburg County to join the Saponi and Tutelo, thence to North Carolina, and ultimately the Siouan tribes merged with the Cayuga Indians of upstate New York. The last to speak the local language would die there in 1898. Some local tribes in southern Franklin County may also have merged with the Catawba of South Carolina.

Long hunters and Indian traders were the first to penetrate this wilderness area. In 1671 the Woods expedition set out from present-day Petersburg to find the "western waters." Led by Batts and Fallam they crossed northern Franklin County before visiting the Totera Indians at present-day Roanoke and then proceeded to the New River where, indeed, they found the waters flowing westward. While in the Roanoke area they noted that William Byrd already was there trading with the Indians. Other Indian traders are known to have frequented the area south of Franklin County during the 1670s.

By the 1740s pioneer settlers had pushed into present-day Franklin County and begun to patent land. By 1746 Robert Hodges had a cabin on Chestnut Creek. Benjamin Wray was on Maggodee Creek in 1747. At this time James and Joseph Rentfro settled the forks of the Blackwater and there erected a mill near present-day Callaway; John, Stephen, and Mark Cole settled on Blackwater River and Story Creek; Thomas Gill settled on Gills Creek; Nicholas Haile on Otter Creek (Endicott); Roger Turner on Turners Creek and James Standifer on lower Blackwater. Robert Hill settled the Rocky Mount area near Moore's Entry Mountain "called by some the Bald Knob."

Simultaneously with the ingress of settlers in the 1740s, traders' paths and Indian paths as well as game trails were converted into roads. By the Treaty of Lancaster in 1744, the Iroquois gave up possession but not use of the Great Indian Warrior Path. Locally this path would be improved by Morgan Bryan in 1746 and Steven Cole in 1752 to become an integral part of the Great Wagon Road from Philadelphia to the Yadkin, called locally the Carolina Road. In 1753 a group of Moravians traveling from Pennsylvania to present-day Winston-Salem passed along this route and left detailed records of the difficulty of traveling in their large Conestoga wagon. The road extended some 800 miles from Philadelphia to present-day Augusta, Georgia, and became the most heavily traveled road in all colonial America. Along this route locally traveled the Iroquois, the Cherokee, Daniel Boone, George Washington, Count Pulaski and his revolutionary troops, Andrew Jackson, large Conestoga wagons with six-horse teams, and large herds of cattle, sheep, and hogs along with flocks of turkeys headed to market. It was the route for thousands of Americans including those of German, Swiss, and Dutch extraction; many of Dunkard faith, from Pennsylvania who populated northwestern Franklin County. There they excelled in farming, animal husbandry, and as orchardists. Along this same route came the newly arrived Scotch-Irish from Pennsylvania to settle the mountainous southwestern Franklin County where they became rugged woodsmen and notorious moonshiners.

The Warwick Road was of importance equal to the Great Wagon Road but ran in an east-west direction in the 1740s. Originating at the port of Warwick just south of present-day Richmond, the road ran westward with a branch swinging southward from New London to cross Franklin County and continue over the Blue Ridge west of Callaway. From Warwick supplies were sent to the frontier and back to the port hogsheads of local tobacco were rolled for export to England. Similarly, ingress from the East was afforded by the Pigg River Road of the 1750s, which led across Pittsylvania County, Snow Creek, by Sontag and Rocky Mount, and ultimately over the Blue Ridge. Along these routes the English and Scotch moved westward and transplanted the tobacco plantation economy of eastern Virginia. An integral part of this society was slavery and thus black society was established in Franklin County.

Although the local Indians had largely abandoned this area in the 1740s when the early settlers established themselves, life was not without the threat of the Red Man. During the 1750s the Shawnee of Ohio at the instigation of the French created terror in the area. Indians captured Robert Pusey and his family on Otter Creek and traded them to the French in Detroit. Robert Hill, who lived near Rocky Mount, lost two sons: one killed in the doorway of his fortified home and the other scalped on Bald Knob. Local inhabitants also suffered at the hands of the Cherokee in 1757 as these supposed English allies became disillusioned with the war between the French and English and vented their frustration on local citizens while on their way home to the Carolinas and Tennessee. To present Indian atrocities east of the Blue Ridge a series of forts was placed along the frontier at the most logical passes for the Indians to cross. One was Fort Blackwater erected east of Nearway Ridge along the Warwick Road at the forks of the Blackwater River near Callaway. George Washington inspected that fort in 1756.

The citizens of the area were called upon to supply soldiers, munitions, and supplies during the Revolution. Besides the usual expected complement of soldiers, the local militia was summoned for duty to head off Cornwallis on his march north before he invaded Virginia. They gave a good account of themselves at Guilford Courthouse and turned Cornwallis east toward Yorktown. James Callaway supplied cannon balls, camp kettles, and iron supplies from the Washington Iron Works at Rocky Mount. Area residents also saw their food supplies impressed for use by the Yorktown troops. But only a Tory sympathizer, John Hook, a wealthy

Scots merchant at Hale's Ford protested and brought suit against the state for taking his beef. Patrick Henry defended the state, however, and with his oratory at its best, left the court convulsed with laughter and Hook driven from the room by ridicule.

Franklin County's first industry was iron, an ironworks' having been established near Rocky Mount by 1773 by Colonel John Donelson, father-in-law of future president Andrew Jackson. Bought by Colonel James Callaway and Jeremiah Early (great grandfather of General Jubal Anderson Early) in 1779, the iron plantation was expanded to 18,000 acres and named the Washington Iron Works to honor their friend and leader of the American troops. Utilizing the Carolina Road, Callaway marketed his iron products in the Carolinas and Georgia. Spurred by the success of this ironworks, others were developed locally in the 1790s: the Carron Furnace (Ferrum) and Forge (Blackwater) by Hill, Bernard, and Armstrong; the Elk Forge (Blackwater) by Steven Trigg; and the Southeast Forge (Pigg River) by Robert Harvey. The Saunders family became the leading ironmasters of the nineteenth century with the acquisition of the Washington Iron Works, the Carron Works, and the Elk Forge. Of these, only the Washington Iron Works survived past the first quarter of the century. Later during the mid-nineteenth century the Carron Furnace was rebuilt and the Valley Forge opened by the Saunders family. The Toncrey Furnace on the Floyd line and the Union Furnace near the Henry-Patrick line were also developed. By mid-nineteenth century economic pressures by the northern coke-fueled furnaces would make the southern charcoal furnaces impractical and only the exigencies of the Civil War would preserve this industry for a few more years.

With the formation of Franklin County in 1786, the General Assembly directed that the first court be held at Colonel Callaway's house at the ironworks. This site also proved to be near the geographic center of the new county. Already there existed a network of roads converging on the ironworks as spokes converge on a hub. With his typical business acumen, Callaway donated the present courthouse lot where the first log courthouse was built later in 1786. Not surprisingly, Callaway erected a large tavern next door and from these structures began the town of Rocky Mount. By 1836 the *Gazetteer of Virginia* described Rocky Mount thusly: "The town has about 30 dwelling houses, 3 general stores, and 2 taverns. The mechanics are 2 tailors, a saddler, cabinet maker, 2 blacksmiths, a boot and shoe manufacturer, a printing office, which issues a weekly paper, and a tan yard. In the vicinity there is an iron furnace and forge which give employment to 100 operatives, and manufacture about 160 tons of bar iron and castings annually. Population (exclusive of the persons employed in the iron manufactory) 175 persons, of whom 3 are attorneys, and 1 physician."

Other towns also emerged in the county. Mount Pleasant was formed in 1805 in the northeastern sector of present-day Rocky Mount bordering on the courthouse lot. In 1875 it was incorporated into Rocky Mount. During the 1790s Germantown (near Wirtz) and Wisenburg were laid out. Germantown flourished for a short time, then totally disappeared; Wisenburg never made it from the start. Boones Mill was established by Jacob Boon, a cousin of Daniel, in 1784. The town of Lawrence proposed in 1818 for Merriman's Run on the Staunton south of Hale's Ford never materialized. It was not until the coming of the railroad in 1889 that Ferrum became a local depot named because of the iron mines nearby.

Though the official church prior to the Revolution, the Anglican Church fell into disfavor by the time of the formation of the county. Only one colonial church remains, the Snow Creek Chapel of 1769, which has served as Old Chapel Primitive Baptist Church since 1789. By 1840 it was reported there were only eight Episcopal communicants, all female, in Pittsylvania, Franklin and Henry counties. The Baptists, under the influence of Samuel Harris, of Pittsylvania, developed early in this area. The Blackwater Meeting House organized in 1761 was much later succeeded by Fairmont Church in 1855, and Pigg River Church was established in 1773 by Nathan Hall. Concomitantly the Methodists spread from Pittsylvania County where they were established by 1776. By the 1790s the Presbyterians were active in the area and even later came the Christians. The Brethren (Dunkards) established themselves in the late 1770s and gained great momentum with the coming of Elder Jacob Miller in 1786. Around 1800 Miller led a large number of Brethren to establish the Dunkard faith in the Miami Valley of Ohio from where they eventually continued their spread to California.

From before its inception to the present, Franklin County has furnished soldiers in every war from the French and Indian War to Vietnam. During the Civil War its losses were staggering but its commitment was firm. Franklin County soldiers shared the honor and paid the price of being among those to reach the furthermost point of Pickett's charge at Gettysburg, the most gallant charge ever witnessed by mortal man and the "high-water mark of the Confederacy."

Franklin County's greatest soldier was Confederate General Jubal Early. Born in the Red Valley community, the West Point graduate practiced law in Rocky Mount, served as commonwealth's attorney, defended the rights of blacks, opposed secession, fought in more battles than any other Confederate general, came nearest to capturing Washington, was termed by Lee as his most capable general outside of Stonewall Jackson, and was known thereafter as the Unreconstructed Rebel.

Another nationally known native son was black educator Booker T. Washington. Born a slave on the Burroughs plantation near Hale's Ford, he pursued his education at Hampton Institute, later established Tuskegee Institute, and became the spokesman for black American and confidant of Presidents McKinley, Roosevelt, and Taft. Today his birthplace is a national monument.

Educaitonal facilities were established early in Franklin County with the presence of a schoolhouse already in existence in 1756 on Fox Run of Blackwater River. By 1832 free public schools were reported by Franklin County authorities. Prior to the development of a public education system in Virginia in 1870, most educational efforts were private, however. Even then private academies such as Captain Duncan's Academy at Hale's Ford and the Lucy Wade School at Sontag offered preparatory education. One-room schools were numerous and were the norm for education prior to the consolidation of schools beginning in the late 1920s. Church-oriented mission schools gave added assistance to the educational process, and the establishment of Ferrum College in 1913 provided an opportunity for even higher education in the area.

Agriculture has been the predominant occupation of a majority of county residents from the earliest beginnings to more recent times. Tobacco was the leading crop in early Franklin County and in the nineteenth century spurred the establishment of many tobacco factories scattered throughout the county. Subsistence farming persisted for many years, especially in the more rugged mountainous areas of the county. Here again this provided the impetus for industry as the rugged Scotch-Irish converted their corn crops to "liquid assets" that were more profitable and more easily transported. Orchards were developed early in Franklin County with Obadiah Woodson's 304 fruit trees recorded on Snow Creek in 1754. Later there developed the famous Algoma Orchards of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries and even more recently the Occanneechi Orchards, of Boones Mill. Animal husbandry for many years had been a growing industry with Franklin County now figuring prominently as one of Virginia's leading dairy producers. Other agricultural ventures such as attempts at producing hemp and silk by silkworms were unsuccessful in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries; innovation and experimentation, however,

remain essential to the vitality of agriculture in Franklin County even today.

In the late nineteenth century the county began to become more industrialized. With the coming of the Norfolk and Western Railroad in 1892 the Punkin Vine route through Franklin County provided new access for industry. The small Franklin and Pittsylvania (F&P) Railroad established in 1878 had never been financially successful in its attempt to connect with the Southern Railway at Franklin Junction (Gretna). Local industries appeared throughout the county: numerous tobacco factories were established, the most famous being Brown's of Dickinson, which would eventually be incorporated in the R. J. Reynolds empire; the Martin Woolen Mill, of Callaway, along with a sassafrass and stave mill there; a pottery factory in Penhook; and numerous other small ventures. Later industries became more centralized such as the Black Prince Overall Company and Byrd's Oriental Balm patent medicine manufactory of Rocky Mount. There also developed the Bald Knob Furniture Company, and subsequently many diversified wood-and textile-oriented industries. In spite of other industries, moonshining was indigenous to the county. In 1935 Franklin County became notorious as the wettest county in the nation with the publication of the Wickersham Report showing that local residents in a period of four years had bought 34 tons of yeast, 117,000 tons of sugar, 16,000,000 pounds of meal, 115,000 pounds of copper, and 800,000 five gallon tins—to produce an estimated 3.5 million gallons of moonshine.

With the development of the 2,880-acre Philpott Lake and the 20,600-acre Smith Mountain Lake, Franklin County became the Land Between the Lakes. Attracted by the natural beauty of the countryside, the favorable climate, fresh air and fresh water, the friendly people, the economic stability of the county, and the added attraction of large freshwater lakes abounding with residential and recreational opportunities, newcomers have flocked to the area and have contributed significantly to the vitality and diversity of this county.

The face of Franklin County is changing: the fertile bottomlands of Smith, Blackwater and Staunton rivers have been covered by the waters of large hydroelectric projects, which have spawned residential and recreational meccas for the Southeast. Small family farms have been incorporated in larger specialized agricultural complexes. Industrialization is more apparent throughout the county. Just as apparent is the preservation of those principles and ideals that have long been held sacred by the citizens of Franklin County—a strong sense of individual liberty, pride, self-government, self-reliance, conservatism in all matters, and a deep and abiding faith in God. Today, as Franklin County stands on the threshold of the twenty-first century, we take great pride in our two centuries of growth and development, of our accomplishments both great and small, and of who we are as a people. Just as important we look to the future.

"Progressing with Confidence,
Remembering with Pride." □

Local, state and federal dignitaries met Wednesday, Jan. 1, 1986, to commemorate the first meeting of the county court and to celebrate Franklin County's 200th birthday. Seated from left are Blue Ridge District Supervisor Thurman E. Scott Jr.; Boone District Supervisor Homer Murray; Rocky Mount District Supervisor Gus Forry; Union Hall District Supervisor Miles HOlland; Gills Creek District Supervisor John Booth; and Snow Creek District Supervisor Noell Parcell. Standing from left are the Rev. McKinley Hamilton; the Rev. Clarence E. Byerly; T. Keister Greer; Chairman of the Board of Supervisors Billie Robertson of the Blackwater District; Rocky Mount Mayor Allen O. Woody, Jr.; Franklin County General District Court Judge W.N. (Bill) Alexander II; Fifth District Congressman W.C. (Dan) Daniel; Sen. Virgil H. Goode Jr.; Assistant County Administrator John Lester; Franklin County Administrator Richard E. Huff II; Del. Willard R. Finney; and Dr. J. Francis Amos, chairman of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission. Speaker of the House of Delegates, A.L. Philpott, spoke at the ceremony, but is not pictured. (Photo by Karen Young)

Indians In Franklin County, Virginia

Richard P. Gravley, Jr.

Before the arrival of the first European explorers, trappers, and traders in the area that is now Franklin County, the country had for thousands of years been occupied by various groups of natives whose relatives along the coast had been called Indians by the discoverers of the New World in the mistaken belief that they had arrived in the Indies, to which a shorter sea route to the west across the Atlantic had long been sought. The ancestors of the Indians (the name clung to them, even after the discoverers' error had been corrected) had come in several waves from northeastern Siberia over land bridges, which at times stretched across the Bering Strait to Alaska. These first arrivals spread over the entire expanse of North and South America, during a period of perhaps 30,000 years. Over the centuries, three distinct cultures evolved in eastern North America, called by anthropologists the Paleolithic, Archaic, and Woodland cultures in the order in which they appeared.

The Paleolithic (from the Greek for "ancient stone," usually shortened to "Paleo") people were those who came first, and were few in number compared to the later cultures, and were widely scattered. They differed from the later round-headed, stocky immigrants in that they had long, narrow skulls and a tall, well-built skeletal structure. It is now thought that they were neither Indian nor Asiatic, but the common ancestors of both these racial stocks. From the archaeological evidence it appears that they lived by following and hunting herds of large grazing animals, most of which are now extinct, including giant bison, mammoths, woolly elephants, and a species of rhinoceros, which had developed in Asia, and which the Paleo groups probably followed in their wanderings across the land bridge into North America. The Paleo hunters were skilled flint knappers who used the finest glassy minerals that they could obtain. Evidence of their presence in Franklin County are occasional finds, particularly along Pigg River, of their beautifully made "fluted" spear points. From these spear points long thin flakes had been struck on both sides, producing shallow channels useful for fastening the points to wooden shafts to make the thrusting spears with which they hunted their game and probably waged war against other groups.

The Paleo people abruptly disappeared as a culture perhaps eighteen to twenty thousand years after their arrival in the New World, probably because of climatic changes that resulted in the extinction of the game animals on which they depended for food. They were replaced by a new and physically different group, probably representing a later migration into North America, who were "hunters and gatherers," and who may have interbred with the Paleo hunters - the Archaic culture, which arose perhaps eight thousand years ago. The Archaic people lived on deer, bear, small game, fish and mollusks from the streams, and wide variety of plant food gathered from the wild. Their main weapon was still the spear, but a short, lighter version suitable for throwing, with smaller stone points. Some early inventor among these people developed the spear thrower or *atlatl*, as the Aztecs later named it, which was a shaft of wood with a hook on the end. By extending the effective length of the user's arm, the *atlatl* enabled him to throw a dart with more force for a much greater distance. Drilled and polished banner stones were attached to the *atlatl* shafts, probably for balance, and are occasionally found in the western part of Virginia. The stone points used on these darts were smaller, more crudely made, and utilized coarser stone than those of the Paleo people, and showed wide regional and temporal variations in shape. Soapstone, from several local quarries, was used to make large, heavy, flat-bottomed bowls, usually with a projecting rim lug or handle on each end. In the Franklin County area, the sites attributed to the Archaic people far out number those of the earlier and later cultures combined, and range from quarries for soapstone and flint to chipping stations where dart points were made, kill sites where game was butchered, stone fish traps, seasonal campsites, and scattered rock shelters under projecting stone ledges. Except for the quarries all of the Archaic sites share one thing in common - their proximity to fresh water. Also, they are usually located on the high ground above the river bottoms, probably for protection from flood water.

This Indian carving was found near Jack's Mountain in Franklin County. It might be man's earliest attempt at portraiture in Franklin County.

A little before the Christian era, about twenty-five hundred years ago, perhaps because of discoveries that the Archaic people themselves made, they gave way to a culture based on agriculture, supplemented by hunting, fishing, and gathering wild plant food. The very efficient bow and arrow using small triangular stone or bone points appeared; fired clay pots and other vessels in a variety of shapes and sizes, often decorated by punched or scratched designs or molded decorative elements, began to be made; and the larger groups that agriculture made possible gathered into semipermanent unfortified villages of huts covered with bark, straw, clay daubling, or animal skins that were located along the large local steams near the fertile level bottom-lands in which the Woodland Indians, as this culture is called, grew their crops of corn (maize), several types of beans, pumpkins, squash, and a few other domesticated plants. In Franklin, Henry, and Patrick Counties over forty such villages have been discovered, nineteen of which have been investigated, some in considerable detail.

Radiocarbon dates have been obtained on charred plant material from nine of the local villages. Three of these dates are early: 580 A.D., 935 A.D., and 1025 A.D. Four dates cluster around 1300 to 1400 A.D., which is probably the time at which village life reached its peak locally. Two villages date to about 1650 to 1750; both contained glass and metal trade goods. At some of the village sites, careful excavation has found the posthole patterns of house frames made

by driving sharpened saplings into the ground. Burials, pits used first for food storage and then for trash disposal after they had been emptied of the stored food, and a number of posthole patterns of smaller structures used for purposes that now can only be guessed at also were found. In the steams stone fish dams, still in remarkably good condition, have been discovered. Two of these are in Franklin County, one on Pigg River and the other on Blackwater River.

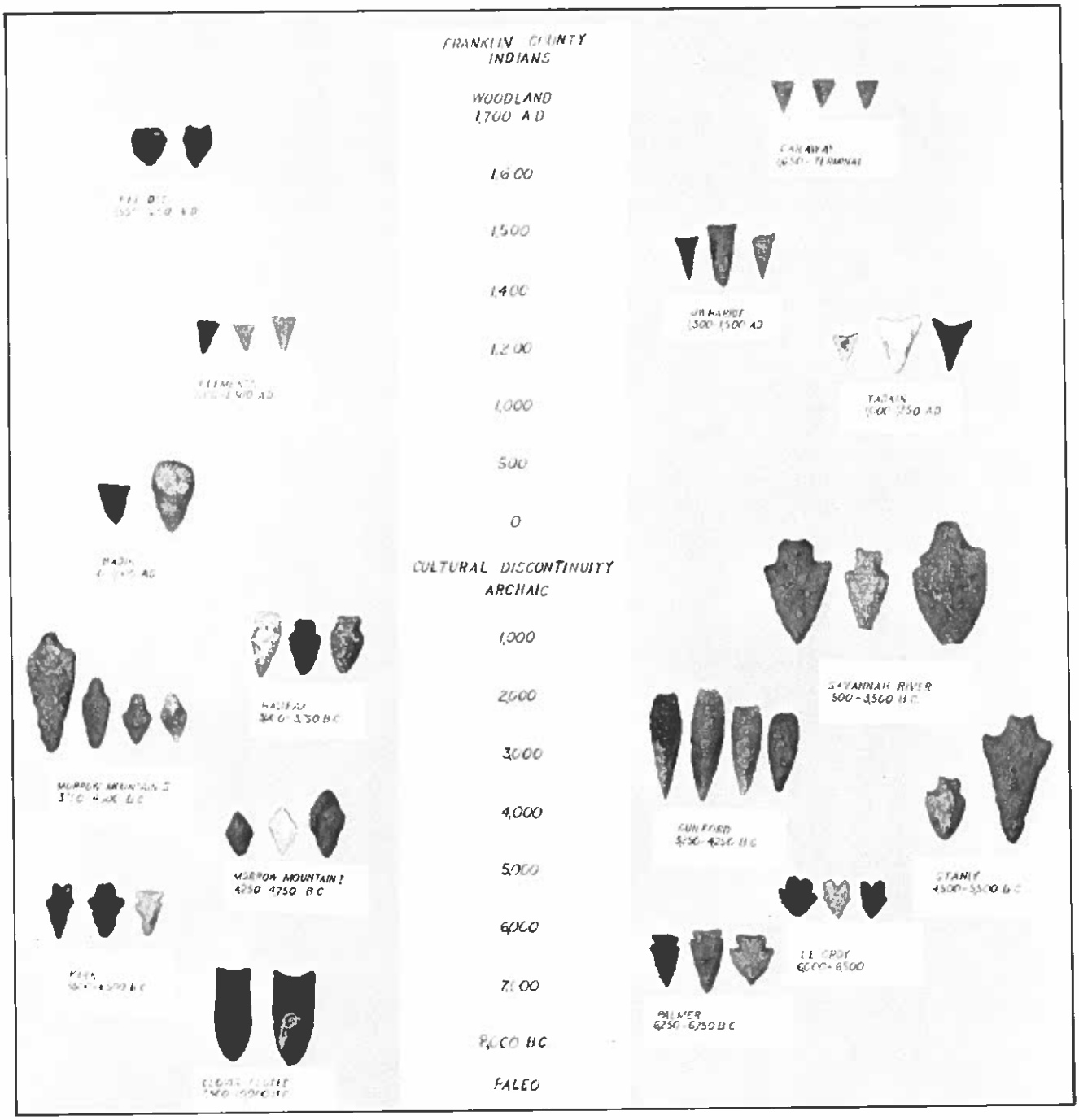
The Indian fish traps, many of which the white settlers continued to use, were V-shaped dams made of stones with the tip of the V open and pointing downstream. In use, a net or a loosely woven basket would be placed across the opening, and a group of Indians would enter the water and walk downstream toward the trap, kicking and splashing, driving the fish ahead of them to be funneled by the trap into the net or basket. Since fish were plentiful in the streams in those days, a single "drive" would produce many pounds of fresh food. Some of the fish were smoked on wooden racks for later use.

On one village site in Henry County near Leatherwood Creek, a pattern of rectangular houses surrounding a central round structure (probably a combined temple and council house) was found. Several of the houses had been destroyed (by hostile action?) and rebuilt on the same location, with overlapping but separate posthole outlines.

Distinctively shaped communal houses and similar burial customs point to the same degree of ceremonialism in the lives of the early Woodland farmers that the first Europeans found among the historic tribes. In our area, graves were small and oval, of varying depths, generally aligned east to west. Usually they are simple vertical-side pits but occasionally one is found with a shallow chamber dug to the side at the bottom, forming a small alcove in which the body was placed. In most cases the body lay on the side, with the knees drawn up, and the arms folded over the chest or abdomen, fully dressed, often wearing shell or bone ornaments. Sometimes the graments were covered in shell bead embroidery. The flexed position seems to have resulted from the necessity of fitting a body into the small graves that the Indians, using their crude digging tools, customarily made.

Usually, buried Indians were placed with their heads to the east, some of them with their tools and weapons placed around them, and often with pottery vessels (which probably contained food and drink) in the graves. Sometimes holes had been punched in the clay pots and bowls to "kill" them. The early historic tribes believed that they had souls, which survived the death of their bodies in an afterworld. The souls of those who had lived a good life went to a land beyond the setting of the sun that was always warm and bright, full of game, fish, and fruit, with bountiful crops that grew without the necessity of planting, in which there was no pain, disease, or suffering and where they would be greeted by the souls of their friends and relatives who had gone before. The east-west burial position perhaps represented an attempt to lay the body with it feet on the path to the west and its eyes toward the rising sun, whose rays striking into the darkness of the grave, would

This drawing by John White, published in 1590, of Indians along the Roanoke River near Roanoke Island gives us our best contemporary view of Indian life at the time of the coming of the White man. The presence of similar house structures, palisaded villages, adjacent fields and other details have been attested to by archeological investigation in our area.



Franklin County projectile points typical of those found throughout the county and covering a span of more than 10,000 years of occupation before the coming of the first settlers in the 1740s.

rouse the spirit lying there, which would then leave the earth and follow the sun across the sky to the land beyond the sunset. Many of the historic tribes believed that all things had spirits and spirits had the same needs as living persons. The prehistoric Indians seem to have held this belief also, and placed food, drink, and "killed" pots in a grave, so that the spirit of the dead Indian could make use of the spirits of these articles on his journey to the west.

Evil Indians met a much grimmer fate in the afterworld. They were either buried so the rising sun could not reach their eyes, doomed to lie forever in the cold dark earth, or their spirits would be consigned to a land of ice and darkness. They would be eternally harassed by throngs of ugly old hags who screeched unceasingly at them while scratching at them with their long filthy fingernails.

In every village investiaged so far in our area, it appears that the villagers observed the busk, or Green Corn Ceremony, a midsummer, new year celebration first reported by the early European explorers. During the busk, the villagers would put out their fires and with much ritual light new ones; the village and the interiors of the houses would be carefully swept with twig brushes; the ashes of the old fires and the sweepings from the village, together with all old garments, broken clay vessels, worn-out tools and weapons, food remains, animal bones, clam and snail shells, and other debris would be gathered up and thrown into refuse pits. Some groups went so far as to smash and discard all their pottery vessels and replace them with freshly made ones. Refuse pits were originally dug into the clay subsoil for food storage, lined with grass and bark, and in fall used to hold the harvested crops from their fields. By summer they were empty of the stored food, convenient for holding the village's garbage and debris.

Trash pits are numerous on Woodland village sites, and their contents shed a great deal of light on the way of life of these prehistoric people. Found in them are large quantities of broken clay vessels and potsherds, as well as arrowheads, stone drills and knives, stone scrapers, axes, hoes, grubbing tools and hammer stones, bone fishhooks of several types and the distinctively shaped blanks from which they were made, bone awls, needles, perforators, burnishers, bird-bone whistles, six-or eight-hole flutes, turkey calls, and numerous objects whose uses are unknown. Bones of a variety of game animals, birds, and fish, mollusk shells, and charred plant remains show the wide variety of food available to the villagers. All of this material with the archaeological findings from burials and house patterns paints a picture of a fairly sophisticated adaptation by the Indian to his surroundings, quite different from the image of a naked savage scratching himself in the cold rain under a leaky, drafty shelter of leaves. These were people who could live well and comfortable in an environment in which we today would be hard put to survive, even for a few weeks.

After perhaps a thousand years of open village life, there began, at approximately the time of the discovery of America by Columbus, a period of upheaval and unrest, with a considerable movement of groups or entire tribes over wide areas. Later village sites indicate this; fortifications suddenly appear about them - high palisades of sharpened tree trunks placed upright and braced with stones in trenches dug around the groups of houses. Warfare on a considerable scale appears; burials have been found in some of these fortified villages with arrowheads embedded in a bone, or with knife marks around the skull indicative of scalping; and one burned palisade was found with the charred stubs of its posts still embedded in the palisade ditch. This period of conflict, the cause of which is not known with certainty but which probably stemmed from increasing population pressure in the area east of the Mississippi, was intensified by the influx of the European traders and settlers, bringing their disputes, their rum, their religious fanaticism and their diseases. It was standard practice to furnish the tribes with weapons and set one against the other in order to gain advantage over other European nations in the trade, and to ply the Indians with rum so as to get the better of them during the bargaining sessions. This resulted in the almost complete disappearance of the Indians from the Virginia piedmont within a few generations.

The villagers in what is now Franklin County were subjected to heavy pressure during this period. Through the area ran one of the main north-to-south trails, along which passed parties of warriors from the Creek nations in Georgia and Alabama on their way to attack their enemies in Pennsylvania and New York, and parties of the northern Indians, the Five Nations, traveling south for revenge. These were all fierce and brutal fighting men, who left their mark on the villagers living along the extent of the Warrior's Path. In fact, the name of one of the Five Nations, the Senecas, entered the language as a synonym for unrelenting cruelty; all northern hostiles were referred to by the early settlers as Sinnagers.

Running across the Warrior's Path in Franklin County was another trail first used by early European traders venturing to the west, known as the Warwick ("Warrick") Road, from Petersburg (a major base for the western Indian trade) westward into the lower Valley, where it became the Wilderness Trail and continued into the Tennessee, Ohio, and Kentucky country. During the French and Indian War, parties of Shawnee and other western Indians from the Ohio country came by this route into the frontier settlements in our area, where they committed numerous atrocities, sometimes capturing individuals or entire families and carrying them off into captivity. Several accounts of such abductions, written by local inhabitants, have been preserved.

Here and there in the early court records of the counties to the east of Franklin are clues and hazy references to a second east-west trail, called by several names. It is usually The Trading Path, or The Indian Path, and in the mid-1700s it was known as Hickey's Road, for John Hickey, an early trader who probably settled at first on the Grassy Creek fork of Town Creek a little to the southeast of the community of Henry, where "Molly Hickey's Cabbins" are shown in the early court records. It apparently ran through the South Boston area by present-day Halifax and Chatham to Leatherwood (Henry County), where it may have turned northwest over the ranges of hills, or westwards to reach and follow Smith River upstream to reach Town Creek about where the community of Philpott now stands. Locally, Town Creek or Town Fork usually refers to an Indian Town (for example, Town Creek mound and village, and Town Fork of the Dan River near Walnut Cove in North Carolina on which the Upper Sauratown village stood). The Town Creek (Butterum Town" or "Buttrum Town" Creek in the early records, from an early settler who may possibly have been a trader or factor there) in southwest Franklin County is no exception. The Philpott family of Henry County owns a large tract of level land at the mouth of Town Creek on Smith River in which have been found the remains of two (and some evidence of more) Indian towns. One of these is prehistoric, and the second, discovered only recently in March 1985, is a historic village that was obviously known to the traders and was probably Butterum Town from which Town Creek received its name. Ditching and land leveling on the site this spring exposed several Indian burials, in two of which were European trade goods: glass beads (both necklace and embroidery types), tubular copper necklace beads, and a round, perforated copper breastplate disk or "gorget," worn suspended from a necklace. These articles are very similar to objects found on the historic Indian villages of Upper and Lower Sauratown on the Dan River to the south, not far from the mouth of the Smith River. In 1979, a charcoal sample from the eighteen-inch level of a refuse pit on the Philpott site close to these burials was dated by radiocarbon testing to A.D. 1745, plus or minus fifty-five years - in good agreement with the dates given by the historical record and by the presence of trade goods on the site.

On Smith River, a short distance upstream from Town Creek, was a very large Indian village in a field so littered with bone and clamshells that it was known locally as Bone Bottom. It was situated at the mouth of Goblintown Creek (sometimes Gobbling Town) and is now deep beneath the waters of Philpott Lake. This is another example of an Indian village on a "Town" creek. Although there are no reports of trade goods from the site, it was probably contemporary with the Philpott site and may in fact have been the more important of the two.

Who were the Indians that lived in these two villages? We find no reference to them by name in the records. Since they lived only a day's journey from the Saura villages on Dan River in the same time period, possibly they were a small outlying colony of that tribe. Their fate is unknown. They may have been wiped out by some hostile group, or overwhelmed by the white man's diseases and dissipations, or driven by pressure from hostile tribes to join the Sauras and move with them farther south, ultimately becoming a part of the Catawba Nation. It is very likely that they were the last, or among the last, of our local Indians.

A few scattered clues - the names Town Creek, Goblintown, and Buttrum Town with the various references to the Indian Path or the Trading Path in the court records - are all that survive in the written accounts to hint of the Indians who were living along the Smith River when the first English hunters and traders moved into our area, almost three hundred years ago. □

RICHARD P. GRAVELY, JR., *a native and resident of Henry County, is the preeminent authority on Indians of the Virginia piedmont. Being an avid student of local history, he has combined his scholarly research with many years of archaeological excavations. He is a past president of the Archaeological Society of Virginia and has been cited by that society on many occasions for his outstanding work.*

Farming In Eighteenth-Century Franklin County

Anne Carter Lee

Starting in the 1740s, the virgin forest of present-day Franklin County was turned into settled land by pioneers using the only things they had: fortitude - or perhaps desperation - and a few tools and pieces of equipment. These eighteenth-century settlers were equipped more like eighth-century Saxons than like modern, or even prosperous nineteenth-century, farmers. Although the industrial and agricultural revolution of the nineteenth-century was, historically speaking, just around the corner, for them it came too late. Indications of their farming practices and records of their tools and equipment can be found in contemporary wills, estate inventories, accounts current, store ledgers, and other eighteenth-century sources. These musty and rarely used documents are our keys to unlocking the agricultural past of Franklin County.

This rare Virginia Conestoga wagon is of the type that brought early settlers south along the Great Wagon Road, locally known as the Carolina Road, from Pennsylvania to Franklin County.

CLEARING THE LAND

With their indispensable axes, settlers first chopped down trees to begin clearing land for planting crops. Land clearing was hurried along by the area's thriving iron industry, which necessitated the cutting of about an acre's worth of timber for each day one of the two eighteenth-century furnaces operating in Franklin County was in blast. They could use the felled timber for constructing buildings, fences, furniture and a myriad of other farm and household goods. After the trees were downed, some pioneers had tomahawks or hatchets to help clear away saplings and brush or, in a pinch, defend themselves and their families from the occasional Indian raider.

Some ringed trees or stumps were left to rot while others were removed with heavy chains pulled by draft animals. By alternately grubbing, pulling, and chopping, settlers could eventually remove and burn useless wood. For the rest of the clearing, some settlers had plows and a few had harrows but most had only hand tools: mattocks, shovels, spades, and grubbing hoes. Breaking the soil and their backs at the same time, tough pioneers changed the face of the land.

CULTIVATING

Where chunky stumps or ringed trees still cluttered the fields, only hand tools, the poor man's pride and bane, could be used to cultivate crops. Hoes were common, and occasionally a pointed trowel hoe or a stout hilling hoe is mentioned in an inventory or an account. Draft animals and plows could be used on cleared land by those prosperous enough to afford them.

The early plows had wooden moldboards while later ones were often of iron or steel. Other types of plows used locally included: the bar share plow with a single-piece iron land side and share; the shovel plow with a narrow, tongue-shaped blade; and the Dutch plow with separate wooden land side and iron plowshare. Colters, knife-like attachments on the front of the plow for cutting the earth, were sometimes used. After plowing, topsoil was occasionally further broken up with a harrow, which could also be used for leveling ground, pulling up weeds, and harrowing in broadcast seed. Drawn by animals, early harrows were A-frame or V-frame wooden devices with wooden or iron teeth. Using the only available helps, getting the first crops into the ground was a sweat and muscle job of heroic proportions.

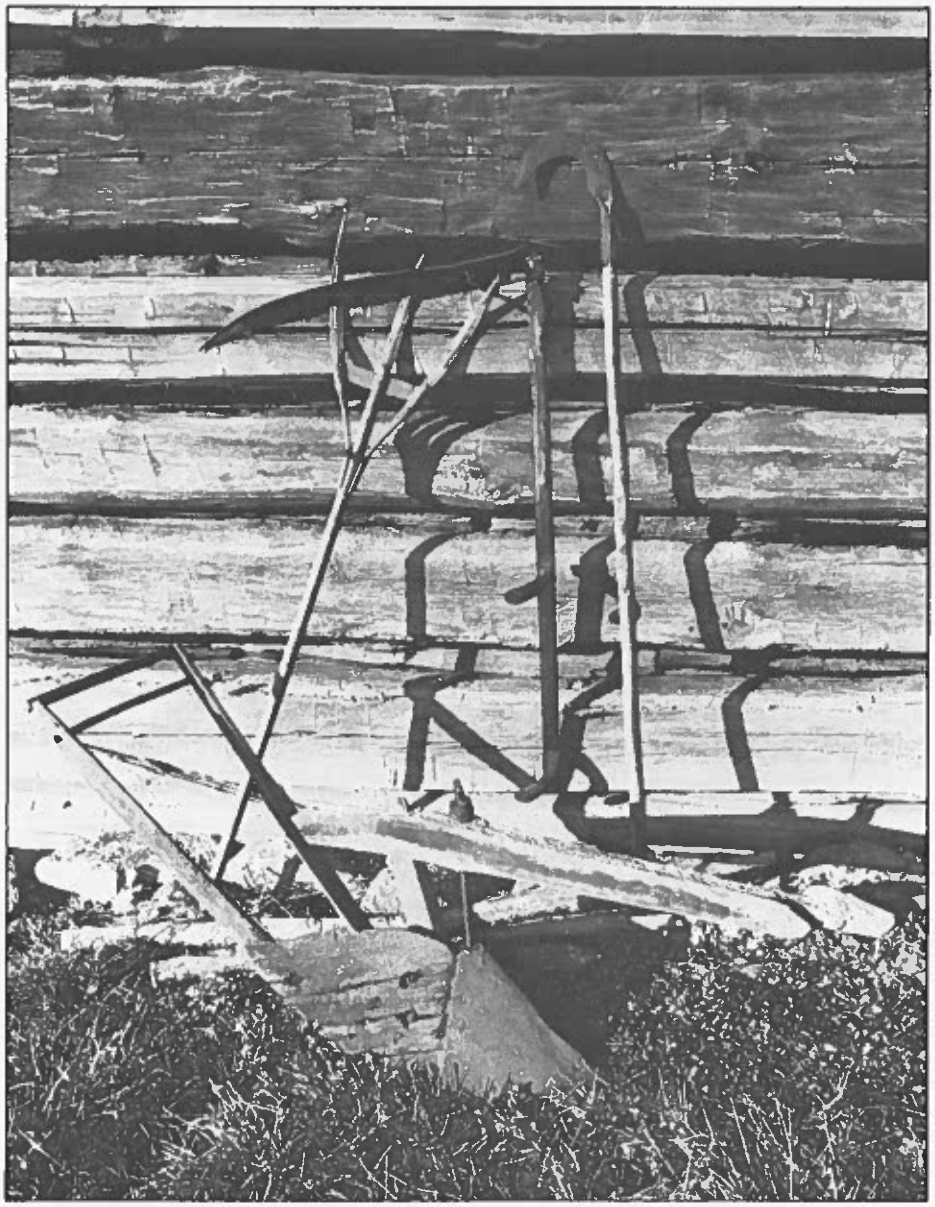
HARVESTING

By the time settlers had laboriously raised a crop, they could count on little mechanical aid in gathering it. For harvesting, reapers bent down and cut grain with either smooth-edged reap hooks or serrated-edged sickles. A few planters had scythes to mow grasses and grains; even fewer had wooden cradles attached to their scythes to catch the grain and lay it down in regular swaths across their fields. Some had rakes, hay forks, and pitchforks and a few had cutting boxes in which harvested hay, straw, or roots could be trimmed to desired lengths. A few also had big hay knives to cut hunks out of compacted hay stacks. One had a turnip chopper to prepare food for stock; another even had a wheat fanning mill to separate chaff from grain. But it is obvious that the average farmer faced an arduous task with little more than manpower.

CROPS

Although food crops and a little cotton, flax, and hemp were grown in eighteenth-century Franklin County, the all-important crop was tobacco. Then as now tobacco farming was a risky proposition. Thomas Jefferson, who had a country house and plantation in nearby Bedford County wrote: "Tobacco is a culture productive of infinite wretchedness. Those employed in it are in a continual state of exertion beyond the power of nature to support. Little food of any kind is raised by them; so that the men and animals on these farms are badly fed, and the earth is rapidly impoverished." Still and all, tobacco was king in the parts of the county that could grow it.

In the tobacco fields, some planters had slides pulled by draft animals to transport picked tobacco, which was then air cured, stemmed, and stripped from the stalks and



This rare Virginia wooden moldboard plow is pictured along with other 18th century farming implements.

"prized" into enormous barrels called hogs heads. Some, and probably most, of the area's export tobacco was sent to Lynchburg and from there down the James River to the East Coast and on to Great Britain.

From its earliest days, the American tobacco industry was tightly regulated. At times inspectors were appointed to oversee even the fields to prevent the curing of suckers or second-growth tobacco. No tobacco could be legally exported from Virginia unless it had been packed in hogsheads or casks and shipped from a public warehouse where it had been inspected. After inspection, warehouse certificates were issued for the stored tobacco and these certificates circulated as money.

Corn was also an important crop. And where there is corn, you can count on having crows. One settler spent a day working to make "a Rattle Mill to Scare Crows," which was probably effective - for a day or so. Oats, rye, and wheat were also grown but in at least one case the wheat was not harvested. Lyman Draper wrote that a man named Cleaveland and his friend the venerable Indian agent Joseph Martin, who lived in present-day Henry County and for whom Martinsville is named, had "put in a field of wheat on Pig River, in what is now Franklin County, Va., but they were too indolent to fence it; there was something of a crop, friends and neighbors were invited to the reaping, a fiddler and whisky were also provided, most of the reapers got drunk, and the crop was never harvested." Settlers generally had to be a sturdy lot but, like almost everyone else, they were not always upright.

As for the rest of their solid diet, Thomas Jefferson noted that wealthy Virginians "are attentive to the raising of vegetables, but very little so to fruits. The poorer people attend to neither, living principally on milk and animal diet." In support of Jefferson's contention, there are only a few mentions of apple or peach orchards in our early records.

ANIMAL HUSBANDRY

A fairly wide range of animals was kept by Franklin County settlers. Many had cattle, hogs, and sheep; some had oxen and geese; but, until the nineteenth-century, probably none had chickens or mules. Beekeeping, then as now, was fairly common. Riveting the attention of Franklin County residents as nothing else could were horses: plodding workhorses, which transported and labored for their owners; nice saddle horses; and exhilarating racehorses. Franklin County had at least two race tracks, or "race paths" as they were called, one on Chestnut Creek and another on Gills Creek. Horse racing and its attendant gambling led down a notorious, if pleasurable, path to ruination in eighteenth-century Virginia.

Practices in animal feeding and care differed greatly from today's standards. Settlers' livestock often roamed freely in search of grazing land. In the autumn, before slaughter, the forest floors were sprinkled with a rich mast of acorns and chestnuts. Since animals were allowed to wander, they had to be marked. Some owners used branding irons but more often they resorted to ear marks that for a small fee, could be registered by the county court. Animals were also belled to help in their roundup. Since the livestock was not fenced, crops had to be enclosed by rail fences. The "wide-open frontier" was probably far more fenced in than today's spreading suburbia.

In this brief look at pioneer farming in Franklin County, many of the complexities of life are not touched upon. Settlers had to hunt, they had to fight, they had to govern themselves. Planting crops, laborious as it was, filled only a part of farmers' lives. They had to make many, indeed most, of the items used by their families, slaves, servants, and employees. Sewing, woodworking, weaving, blacksmithing, and other crafts were integral parts of life on many farms. And the division of land and labor - who had slaves and how many, what did women do, how much land did most farmers have - these and many other questions are clearly part of a complex picture that cannot be painted in a few pages. But a glimpse can be had of what it took to tame a new land for cultivation. Life then was not sweet, simple, and bucolic. It was hard, regulated, tedious, and interesting - probably too interesting. □

ANNE CARTER LEE, *a native of Franklin County and daughter of the late Charles Carter and Henrietta Shelburne Lee, is an architectural historian with an active interest in local historical research. Ms. Lee is a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

Washington Iron Works

John S. Salmon

When pioneers moved westward, they sought cheap land not only for farming, but for industrial uses as well. Would-be manufacturers in the eighteenth century were especially attracted to the iron industry; consequently, the competition for ore-bearing land was intense. Iron ore had been discovered by 1753 in what is now Franklin County, when Pennsylvania native John Wilcox filed a claim with the county surveyor for 400 acres "on Iron Mine Branch of Pigg River." Wilcox, who later operated an ironworks in North Carolina, filed again the next year for an adjoining tract of 403 acres, and in 1760 obtained a patent from the colonial government on another 400 acres. In 1764 Wilcox secured patents to the first two tracts, thereby gaining control of the 1,203 acres that formed the core of the future Washington Iron Works lands.

But sharp dealing soon cost him his property. He trusted John Donelson, surveyor of Pittsylvania County, to pay the quitrents (annual fees paid on the tracts to the colonial government to keep the patent titles alive) due when Wilcox returned to North Carolina in 1768. Donelson (father of Rachel Donelson who later bacame the wife of Andrew Jackson) apparently failed to make the payments; the patents lapsed; and a settler named John Cox claimed the land, then sold his claim to Donelson, who in turn filed for patents to the tracts and decided to build an ironworks on them.

Donelson was not the first to construct such an operation south of the James River. The Oxford Bloomery, located in Bedford County, may have been built as early as 1768. By 1776 it was owned by David Ross, a Petersburg merchant (and probably the wealthiest man in Virginia), and it may have been operated for Ross by James Callaway and Jeremiah Early, both of Bedford County. Competition from the Oxford works probably was not a problem for Donelson, however, since his property was located closer to the Great Wagon Road from Philadelphia to the Carolinas than was the Oxford, and Donelson therefore was able to tap the mobile market that passed by en route to settlements in the backcountry.

To satisfy the settlers' demand for iron, Donelson hired four men, John Hollaway, Charles Hollaway, Amos Span, and Thomas Bolton, to construct and operate his ironworks, and provided six slaves — Dick, Harry, James, Judith, Moody, and Nell — to mine and cart the ore and feed the workers.

The furnace of the Washington Iron Works erected in 1779 by James Callaway. The furnace cracked around 1850 when the dam broke during a freshet, sending a wall of water on the furnace while in full blast. Note the notch at the top posteriorly for the bridge for filling the furnace with iron ore, charcoal and limestone and the casting floor in front of the furnace where iron pigs, pots, stoves, and so forth were made.

In addition to the bloomery and forge, Donelson's ironworks probably had storage sheds for charcoal and extra iron ore, a small warehouse for bar iron, and dwellings for the slaves and white workmen. By 1773 a small industrial village stood where there had been only wilderness the year before.

A bloomery was a relatively unsophisticated device for smelting iron from ore. It resembled a large barbecue pit with a chimney at the rear and may have been built of brick. Layers of charcoal and iron ore were piled in the pit and ignited, while a leather bellows blew blasts of air in through an opening at the back of the chimney. Once molten iron began to settle to the bottom of the pit, workers stirred it with an iron rod until it collected into a pasty ball, called a bloom, on the end of the rod. Using tongs and crowbars, the workmen carried the bloom, which weighted about one hundred pounds, to a forge where it was hammered, reheated, and hammered again until it was shaped into a bar about 6 or 8 feet long, 3 inches wide, and an inch thick. The bar was then sold to a blacksmith for manufacture into wrought iron products.

As the Franklin County area became more thickly settled, the demand for ironware increased beyond the capacity of the bloomery to satisfy it. What was needed was a larger, more technically advanced medium for manufacturing iron: a blast furnace. Such a furnace could produce many times the quantity of iron made by a bloomery and do it more efficiently. But it also required a capital investment beyond Donelson's ability to supply. By 1778 Donelson apparently had leased his bloomery to James Callaway and Jeremiah Early, of Bedford County, and the next year he sold it to them. Callaway and Early, both wealthy men, invested heavily to modernize the ironworks. They named their enterprise the Washington Iron Works after their fellow Virginian and commander of the American army.

Within a month of their purchase, the partners had taken out an advertisement in the *Gazette of the State of South-Carolina.* The advertisement, datelined "Washington Furnace, Henry County, in Virginia, July 21, 1779," announced:

> Notice is hereby Given, THAT the said FURNACE entered into Blast the 1st of the present month, and it is expected will continue until Christmas next: where may be had, by wholesale or retail, the following assortment of castings, to wit, POTS, KETTLES, CAMP-KETTLES, OVENS, SKELLETS, FLATIRONS, SPICE MORTARS, FIRE DOGS, SMITHS ANVILS, FORGE ANVILS, FORGE HAMMERS, WAGGON BOXES, STOVES, or any other kind of Castings that may be wanted.

In order to manufacture such a large

variety of iron products, Callaway and Early had to build not only a blast furnace but a forge as well. The furnace — the one that stands by Furnace Creek today — was built of granite quarried from Scuffling Hill across the creek. Facing the creek, on the southern wall of the furnace, was the work arch, and between it and the creek was the sand bed of the casting floor. Channels were dug in the sand, wherein molten iron flowed from the crucible behind the work arch and formed pig iron. On the eastern face of the furnace was the tuyere arch, the opening into the furnace's crucible through which wooden tub bellows forced air to raise the heat of the burning charcoal to a temperature that would melt the iron from the ore. The creek was dammed upstream, causing water to flow down a sluiceway onto a waterwheel behind the furnace to power the bellows. A bridge led from the top of the furnace stack to the hill behind it, and workers crossed back and forth; filled wheelbarrows with loads of charcoal, limestone flux, and iron ore; and dumped the contents into the furnace chimney to feed the fires below. After the iron had flowed and cooled in the channels on the casting floor, the resulting pigs were carted to the two-hammer forge that stood down river on the site of the present wastewater treatment plant. There the pigs were pounded into bar iron. Back at the furnace, some of the molten iron was ladled into pottery molds to make cast iron of the sort listed in Callaway and Early's advertisement.

Jeremiah Early died in the summer of 1779 and his sons inherited his share of the partnership. James Callaway soon purchased a majority interest, however, and remained the dominant partner until his death in 1809. After he died, the heirs of Callaway and Early operated the ironworks until they sold their shares between 1817 and 1823 to three brothers, Fleming, Peter, and Samuel Saunders.

The Saunders brothers were the sons of Peter Saunders, Sr., one of the founding justices of Franklin County. Fleming Saunders, a lawyer who became a judge of the General Court, and Samuel Saunders, who acquired huge landholdings in Franklin County, left the management of the ironworks to Peter Saunders, Jr., their elder brother. Peter Saunders, Jr., was an imperious and ambitious man, the bachelor father of an illegitmate daughter, a gambler who aroused strong passions for and against himself among his contemporaries. He was at various times a merchant, postmaster of Rocky Mount, militia officer, justice, and sheriff of Franklin County (this last office attained only after a long and bitter struggle with his fellow justices). Most importantly of all, of course, he was the ironmaster of the Washington Iron Works, and under his guidance the company reached the height of its prosperity.

The ironworks became what is known as an "iron plantation." Large numbers of slaves mined ore, made charcoal, operated the furnace and forge, grew crops, and tended the livestock. Iron products were sent to southside Virginia, the Carolinas, and Georgia by horse-drawn wagon and flatboat. The iron plantation was as self-sufficient as possible, with carpenters, blacksmiths, and other slave artisans capable of supplying its needs. The price of iron rose for almost two decades after the Saunders brothers bought the ironworks, until the Panic of 1837, with its attendant bank failures and industrial depression, almost caused the company to fail. Only some crafty financial maneuvers — "selling" all the slaves to two nephews who then paid the taxes on them, for instance — enabled Peter Saunders to remain solvent.

This fragment of an iron stove plate made at the Washington Iron Works bears the date of 1786, the year Franklin County was formed. The inscription is German, as was traditional for such stoves, and was usually a Biblical quote, although this one appears indecipherable.

Age and financial pressures took their toll on Saunders, however. In 1846 he sold his share in the ironworks to his brothers and retired with his daughter to Belle Grove in Pittsylvania County. On 25 May 1847, following a series of strokes, he died, at the age of seventy-one. The *Lynchburg Virginian* printed a generous obituary, recalling of Saunders: "Correct and honorable in his intercourse with mankind, kind in his feelings, courteous in his deportment, and hospitable to all, he lived to share largely in the affections of his fellow citizens and died sincerely lamented."

Another Peter Saunders, the son of Samuel Saunders, took over the iron-master's duties at the Washington Iron Works after the retirement of his uncle. But his interests lay elsewhere, and the old ironworks scarcely made enough money to warrant his full attention. The low price of iron and competition from more efficient northern furnaces spelled the doom of the small charcoal ironworks that the Washington typified. That doom was further sealed by two other factors: the weather and the Civil War. In 1850, according to county tradition, the dam on Furnace Creek burst during a heavy rain and the resulting wall of water cracked the hot rock walls of the furnace, putting it out of commission. A decade later, during the Civil War, some iron was again produced there, but only briefly. The long, active life of the Washington Iron Works had ended.

Today the old furnace still stands on Furnace Creek, a now-silent reminder of the days when the stack belched fire and smoke at Franklin County's first industry. On the hill to the north of the furnace stands the white frame ironmaster's house, which began its life as James Callaway's occasional residence and ordinary at the ironworks, and served as the first courthouse when Franklin County was formed in 1786. Peter Saunders added the second floor early in the 1820s and John I. Saunders, one of his nephews, added a two-story wing to the rear about 1856, making the house T-shaped. The current owners built the wing on the south end of the house in 1981. Behind the building is a two-room brick structure, presumably a slave quarters and kitchen. Nearby stands the stone chimney of the plantation office. All of the other outbuildings — slave cabins, icehouse, dairy, barns, stables, carriage house — have disappeared with the years. □

JOHN S. SALMON *is the author of* The Washington Iron Works of Franklin County, Virginia, 1773-1850, *forthcoming in the spring of 1986 from the Virginia State Library. He has been employed since 1972 as an archivist in the Archives and Records Division of the Virginia State Library, and currently is head of the state records unit there. In May 1985 he was hired by the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission to research and write a history of Franklin County covering the years 1786 to 1986.*

The First County Court

T. Keister Greer

Two hundred years ago, on January 2, 1786, the first court ever held in Franklin County convened itself. The county itself had enjoyed legal existence since the preceeding day, the act of the previous October having provided that it should "from and after the first day of January next form a distinct county, and be called and known by the name of Franklin." [12 Hening's *Statutes*, at 70] The act was specific about the time and place of the holding of the first court:

> That a court for the said county of Franklin shall be held by the justices thereof on the first Monday in every month, after such county shall take place, in like manner as is provided by law for other counties, and shall be by their commissions directed. That the justices to be named in the commission of the peace for the said county of Franklin, shall meet at the house of James Callaway, at his iron works in the said county, upon the first court-day after the said county shall take place; and having taken the oaths prescribed by law, and administered the oath of office to, and taken bond of the sheriff, according to law, proceed to appoint and qualify a clerk, and fix upon a place for holding courts in the said county at or as near the centre thereof as the situation and convenience will admit of; and thenceforth the said court shall proceed to erect the necessary public buildings at such place, and until such buildings be completed, to appoint any place for holding courts as they shall think proper.

When I began practicing law in 1948 the first Monday in every month was still called "courtday," and Rocky Mount was filled with citizens from throughout the county, although the significance of the first Monday to the courts themselves had long ago disappeared. It is only in the last score of years or so that one no longer hears reference to "court day."

The date of the first court was undoubtedly January 2, 1786. The act itself directed that the court meet "upon the first court-day after the said county shall take place," and that was Monday, January 2. It is hard to read the word for the month in old order book no. 1, and it is rendered as "February" in Wingfield's transcription of those records, *An Old Virginia Court*. But the words *Monday* and *second* are very plain in the old record, and demonstrate conclusively that the month was January. The second of January, 1786, was a Monday. The first Monday in February of that year was the sixth.

The legislature had been specific not only about the date the first court should meet, but also the place: "[A]t the house of James Callaway, at his iron works in the said county." This was James Callaway, Jr., son of the James Callaway who was county lieutenant of Bedford County, presiding justice of Bedford's court, and who, when he died in 1809, left an enormous estate in land and slaves. His will included the following provision:

> I give and devise unto my son James Callaway . . . a small piece of Land called Rocky mount . . . except what has been reserved for the County on which the Courthouse stands.

James Callaway, Jr., was married to Elizabeth Greer, a daughter of Captain Moses Greer. They had a daughter who married my great-grandfather Theodrick Webb; she thenceforth had the marvelous Franklin County name of Nancy Tate Greer Callaway Webb.

The stack of the Washington Iron Furnace still stands on the banks of Furnace Creek, behind the home of Mr. and Mrs. Henry Robinson and evidence is strongly suggestive that The Farm, the ironmaster's house of the Washington Iron Works and present home of Dr. and Mrs. J. Francis Amos is the structure in which James Callaway, Jr. then lived, and in which the court first met.

The governor's commission issued as of December 12, 1785, and named twelve men:

Hugh Innes
Robert Hairston
Robert Woods
Peter Saunders
Thomas Arthur
Jonathan Richeson
John Smith
Moses Greer
Spencer Clack
John Gipson
Swinfield Hill
John Rentfro

The first four names had been members of the county court of Henry County. The

The Farm (at the Furnace) located off South Main Street was the ironmaster's house of the Washington Iron Works and site of Franklin County's first court on January 2, 1786. At the time the house was one and one-half stories high and served also as an ordinary (tavern). In the mid-nineteenth century the roof was raised to two stories, an addition to the rear was made and the chimneys were enclosed.

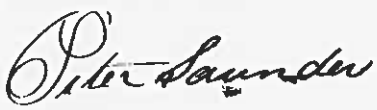
next four all were from north of the Blackwater River and had been citizens of Bedford County. I suspect that all four had been members of Bedford County Court, but I can speak with certainty only as to my own great-great-great grandfather Captain Moses Greer, who became a member of the county court of Bedford County following his service in the revolutionary army.

Let us consider these men in order, with their signatures where we have them:

Hugh Innes was one of the most prominent men of the Virginia frontier. He was a member of the county courts of Pittsylvania, Henry, and Franklin, successively, served in the House of Burgesses from Pittsylvania, was a vestryman of Antrim and Camden parishes of the Church of England, and was colonel of the first militia organization in the county. He was appointed to this latter office despite the strong opposition of Thomas Arthur, who wrote the governor that a "large majority of the militia and old officers with myself conceive shou'd he meet with his appointment, it might be attended with bad consequences. . ." The governor appointed Innes anyway; it is instructive to note that our forebears were not always in perfect charity with each other.

Robert Hairston was a member of a distinguished family that has provided leadership in this area since its settlement. He became a justice of Pittsylvania County in 1775 and a justice of Henry County in 1778. He was the father of George Hairston, who became county lieutenant of Henry County in 1790; another son, Samuel Hairston was colonel of militia in Franklin County in 1800. Samuel Hairston's daughter, Ruth, was General Jubal A. Early's mother.

Antiquarians are divided on the issue of whether Robert Woods should be listed as a member of the first court. I think he should be. He is definitely listed in the commission naming the justices, but there is no record of his taking the oath. Instead he became the first sheriff, an office of high dignity in old Virginia, and one confined by law to justices of the court. It normally rotated among them. Woods had been a justice of Henry County and an officer during the Revolution.



Peter Saunders -- the name was pronounced "Sanders" in 1786 -- had sat on Henry County's first county court, had represented that county in the legislature, and ultimately sat as a justice of the county court of Franklin County for thirty-one years. His last lineal descendant in the male line was Edward Watts (Buck) Saunders, the former dean of engineering at the University of Virginia, who died in 1958. Bill Lee, Dr. Harry Lee's son, is a direct descendant of Peter Saunders through his mother, Elizabeth Saunders Lee. Bill Lee still lives at Bleak Hill, the name given by his great-great-great-grandfather to the plantation two hundred years ago. The Joplins, of Rocky Mount, are also descended from Peter Saunders.

Thomas Arthur received a grant of 824 acres on the south branches of Maggodee Creek in 1780. He was a major of milita, and as a justice was involved in a notable controversy with Peter Saunders in 1791. Dr. Arthur, whom many older Franklin Countians will remember as a practicing physician in Callaway, was a descendant, but there are no lineal issue in the male line now remaining in the county. Thomas Arthur represented Franklin County in the Virginia Convention of 1788, to determine whether the United States Constitution should be ratified. He also served in the House of Delegates for the session of 1787-1788.

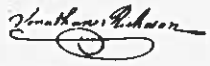
Arthur was awarded some thirty pounds against Captain Moses Greer for assault and battery -- I would like to know the story behind that affray -- in 1791.

Richard Venable, an attorney from Prince Edward, had the following entry in his diary for March 3, 1791:

> Thomas Arthur came on the bench at Franklin courthouse; the rest of the court immediately ran off, and left Arthur sitting like an owl on a chicken roost. Arthur left the bench and we proceeded to business.

Five days later the court took the following action:

> Ordered, that it be certifiyed to the Executive that Thomas Arthur, one of the Justices of the Peace for this County, from his conduct heretofore is by the Court thought to be of Infamous Character. That he stands charged before the Hon'ble the District Court for Forgery, also for forging the name of George Turnbull, Gent, to a Certificate of the Proof of Notice to Thomas Livesay in a suit then Depending in the District Court; for which the Grand Jury of this County found a True Bill, from charges this Court conceives his Character to be Infamous, and refuseth to sit on the Bench of Justice with him; that he frequently disturbeth the Court by takeing his seat by which the Business of the county is greatly retarded.



Johnathan Richeson is normally spoken of as Richardson, but his signature makes it plain how he spelled his name. He received a grant of 430 acres on Gills Creek in 1780. In 1792 he was sheriff of the county.

John Smith patented 279 acres in 1760. In 1767 he patented another tract "on the branches of Blackwater, adjoining Grier's land." He is said to have been a member of the distinguished Smith family of The Pocket on the Staunton River, but there is no real evidence of this.

Captain Moses Greer served on the court almost half a century, from 1786 until his death in 1834. He had been a justice of the county court of Bedford County when his home, before Franklin's formation, lay in that county, and he commanded a company from this area during the revolutionary war. He served nine terms in the Virginia legislature, beginning in 1793. A son, a grandson, and a great-grandson, succeeded him in the honor of representing Franklin County in Richmond. I fear that the tradition of elective public service has now run out in the Greer family.

It would appear that Captain Moses Greer is the only member of the first court still to have lineal issue in the male line remaining in Franklin County. These include Walter M ("Watt") Greer, for many years Rocky Mount's postmaster; John Henry Greer, son of the late Edwin Greer of Sontag; his sons Michael and Robert Greer; and finally the writer, and my son and law partner, Carter Greer, a total of six. Other persons named Greer in Franklin County are not members of this family.

Very little is known of Spencer Clack, save that he was a considerable landowner in the southern part of the county.

Very little is known of John Gipson, save that the court in February 1788, sent the following dispatch to the governor:

Information being Given the court by Swinfield Hill Gent. that John Gipson a justice of the peace for this county who have Removed himself Out of the County but on passing and repassing through the county continues to act as such. The court are therefore of Opinion that from the many illegal practices of the said Gipson he should be Expelled from his office and that the clerk Certify the same to the Executive.

Swinfield Hill was a son of Robert Hill, who was unqestionably one of the first men to settle in Franklin County. He commanded a company at the battle of Guilford Courthouse. With his brother, Thomas, Swinfield Hill patented seven different tracts of land on Blackwater and Pigg between 1779 and 1784.

He represented Franklin County in the House of Delegates in 1792, 1794, and 1795.

John Rentfro was a captain and a company commander, when in 1781 all the militia were marched to General Greene at Guilford Courthouse. Upon the formation of Franklin County he became Second Major of militia, and represented the county in the House of Delegates in 1786—1787.

The county courts were one of the most distincitve features of Virginia government in olden times. Although we are accustomed today to speak of the importance of separating the legislative, executive, and judicial functions, they happily combined all three.

The variety of the county court's tasks is best shown by some of the things they did:

Benja Cook, Robert Prunty, Amos Richardson, Abram Vandevender, or any three of them, are Appointed to View a way for a Road from Pittsya Old Courthouse Road to Joneses Gap on Chesnut Mountain & from thence to the Road Leading to this Courthouse. [September 1786].

At a Court held at Franklin Courthouse on Wednesday the 13th. of September 1786, for the Examination of Robert Edmonds & Rebecca Edmonds his wife who Was Commited on Suspicion of Stealing from Charles Doughton a Squirril Skin Purse and in it One Doubloon, a Joannis, eight part Joanneses, & One guinea On Monday night the 4th Day of this Inst. at Rocky Mount. Present: Peter Saunders, Thomas Arthur, Jonathan Richeson, Swinfield Hill, John Smith & Moses Greer, Gent. The Said Robert Edmonds & Rebecca his Wife being led to the Bar in Custody of Robert Woods, Gent, Sheriff of the Said County to whose Custody for the Cause Aforesaid they were Commited it being Demanded of the said Prisoners Whether they were Guilty of the fact wherewith they Stand Charged or not Guilty the said Robert Edmonds answered that he is Guilty of the fact wherewith he Stands Charged & Whereupon the Court Proceeded to Examine Divers Witnesses as well on behalf of the Common Wealth as the Prisoner at the Bar In Consideration whereof the Court are of Opinion that the Said Robert Edmonds is Guilty of the fact wherewith he stands Charged & that he ought to Receive a further Trial before the Honorable the Genl Court in October next on the first day thereof therefore he is Remanded into Custody Again, Whereupon the Said Robert Edmonds Threw himself on the Mercy of the Court & it is Ordered that, he Stand One half Hour in the Pillory, to receive 39 Lashes on his Bare Back & have Both Ears Croped. And the Said Rebecca is Discharged out of Custody, No Witness Appearing Against her.

Baldwin Rowland behaving Contemptiously to the Court is fined Ten Pounds Current Money & It's Ordered that he be in Custody of Shf untill he pay the Same with Costs & It is further ordered that the Shf. Put him in the Stocks & there Remain One Hour W'th Costs. [November 1787].

A deed from J. Dillion to Jesse Dillion Proved & O.R. [February 1788; note the old spelling of "Dillon"].

At a Court held for Franklin County on Monday the 1st day of June 1788 for the Examination of Reuben Pursel and James Lyon, alias Thompson, for Feloniously Stealing a Sorrel Horse & a Bald Eagle Horse, the Property of Thomas Arthur. Present: Robert Hairston, Jonathan Richeson, Swinfield Hill, Moses Greer, and George Turnbull, Gent. The said Reuben Persel bing led to the Bar in the Custody of Hugh Innes Gent. Sheriff of the said County and to whose Custody he had been Comitd for the Crime aforsaid, & it being Demanded of the said Prisoner whether he is Guilty of the fact wherewith he stands Charged or not guilty, answered that he is in no wise Guilty. Whereupon the Court Proceeded to Examine Divers Witnesses as Well on behalf of the Com. Wealth as the Prisoner at the Bar, on Consideration Whereof the Court are of Opinion that the said Ruben Parsel is Guilty of the facts wherewith he stands Charged & that he Ought to Receive a further Tryal before the Honble the Genl. Court in the City of Richmond On the first day thereof in October next, whereupon he is Remanded into the Custody of the Shff Aforesaid." [June 1788].

To John Law for Killing an Old Wolf, 100. To Samuel Webster 1 Old Wolfs head, 100. [December 1788].

To speak technically for a moment, the County Court had chancery jurisdiction; it could decree both specific performance and partition. Its civil jurisdiction was not limited by the amount in controversy, as is the case in the present general district court. But if the value exceeded ten pounds sterling or concerned the title or boundary of land, there was an appeal to the district court in New London. The Court could sit with a jury, and frequently did:

At a Court held & Continued for Franklin county on Tuesday the Seventh Day of August 1787. Present: Hugh Innes, Robert Hairston, Peter Saunders, Swinfield Hill, Moses Greer, Gent. Johnson vs Doggett. A Jury Sworn, to wit., Joel Estes, John Wilkes, James Turley, James Cannon, Obediah Richardson, Samuel Bird, William Lavinder, Will Farguson, Martin Binnion, Thomas Jones, William Manifee & William Thompson. Jury not agreed on Verdict.

Such was our first court. It was obviously a vigorous, lively, and colorful institution. The justices were not elected, normally served for life, and were not paid. That may explain the competition for the office of sheriff, the only one who made any money. The members of the British House of Commons also used to be unpaid, it being considered that a gentleman should do his public duty without compensation. The reformers of the nineteenth century ended all that; both members of Parliament and Virginia justices began to be paid. In the course of time the legislative function was separated from the judicial, and there was a constantly expanding electorate. All of us can of course agree that the ways of 1986 are vastly superior to those of 1786. But what one would not give to have seen just one sitting of the first court! □

T. KEISTER GREER, *the son of Goldie Shaw Greer and the late Moses Theodrick Greer and the great-great-great grandson of Captain Moses Greer, received his B.A. with honors in history and his L.L.B. from the University of Virginia. He is the author of the thesis, "Genesis of a Virginia Frontier: The Origins of Franklin County, Virginia, 1740-1786" (1946). He is presently a member of the Virginia and California bars and of the board of directors of First Virginia Banks, Inc.; chairman of the board, First Virginia Bank-Franklin County; and a partner of the law firm of Greer & Greer of Rocky Mount. He is also a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

The Tax Lists For 1786

From Wingfield's History of Franklin County

The personal property and land tax lists of 1786 supply an excellent substitute for the Census Report of 1790, from which Franklin County was omitted. In the State Library at Richmond are to be found the personal property tax books of Franklin County beginning with 1786 and continuing through 1863 without a break, except for the year 1808 when Virginians paid no taxes. Beginning with 1787 and continuing through 1852 there are two books for each year. Beginning with 1853 there are three books for each year. There are 163 of these books. One of the books for 1845 is missing.

The following is a composite list made from the personal property tax book and the land tax book of 1786 and is reproduced by permission of the Virginia Book Company.

Aaron, William
Abshire, Abraham
Abshire, Christian
Abshire, Jacob
Abshire, Lodowick
Aday, Josiah
Aday, Walter
Adner, John
Agee, Joshua
Agee, Anthony
Agee, James
Agee, Matthew
Akers, William
Akin, Onecholas
Akin, James
Allen, Samuel
Altick, John
Anderson, James
Anderson, Peter
Anderson, William
Archey, Cornelius
Arthur, John
Arthur, Thomas
Atkins, David
Atkinson, Joel
Asbery, George
Austin, William

Bailey, James
Baley, Martha
Ball, James
Ball, William
Ballard, James
Ballard, Richard
Balp, Edward
Bandy, Richard
Banks, John
Banks, Samuel
Barksdill, John
Bartee, Nancy
Barnes, James
Bartee, William
Barton, David
Bates, Isaac
Bates, John
Beard, Edward
Beard, Samuel
Beaver, Christopher
Beek, Paul
Been, William
Beheler, David
Belcher, Isham
Belcher, James
Bell, William
Bennett, William
Bernan, Martain
Bernard, Nathan
Bernard, Walter
Bevers, James
Biby, John
Binnion, Isaac
Binnion, John
Binnion, Martin
Bird, James
Bird, John
Bird, Samuel
Blackburn, Jacob
Blain, John
Blair, Joseph
Blakley, Robert
Blankenship, Elisha
Blankenship, Hezekiah
Blankenship, Isham, Jr.
Blankenship, Isham, Sr.
Blankenship, Ligon
Blankenship, Peter
Blankenship, Richard
Blassingham, Philip
Bohanan, Henry
Bohanan, William
Boid, Samuel
Boon, Jacob
Boon, John
Booth, John
Booth, John Tim
Booth, Peter
Booth, Richard
Boulton, James
Boulton, Robert
Boulton, Robert, Sr.
Boulton, Thomas
Bowman, John
Boyd, Ralph
Boyd, William
Bozel, John
Brock, Allen
Brook, Joshua
Brock, Moses
Brooks, William
Brower, Christian
Brower, John
Brown, Henry
Brown, Henry
Brown, Richard
Brown, William
Bryant, James
Bryant, John
Bryant, Lewis
Buckley, Samuel
Burdett, Tompkins
Burns, James
Burton, Seth

Caler, John
Callan, Samuel
Callaway, James
Campbell, John
Cantrell, Sarah
Caper, John
Carter, Bailey
Carter, John, Jr.
Carter, John, Sr.
Carter, Joseph
Carter, Robert, Jr.
Carter, Thomas
Chambus, John
Chandler, Daniel
Chandler, Thomas
Chandler, William
Charter, James
Charter, Thomas
Charter, William
Chestwood, Joel
Cheetwood, John, Sr.
Chitwood, William
Choal, Sebert
Choat, Edward, Jr.
Choat, Edward, Sr.
Choat, Isham
Choate, Augustine
Choice, Turley, Jr.
Choice, William
Christian, William
Christopher, William
Clack, Spencer
Clardy, Benjamin
Chateher, John
Claxton, David
Clay, William
Clayborn, John
Clower, Jacob
Coalman, James
Coapland, Richard
Coats, Charles
Coats, Jesse
Coats, Kinzie
Coats, Michael
Cockram, Abner
Cockram, John
Cockram, Samuel
Cockram, William
Cole, Mark
Commens, Thomas
Condee, William
Conner, William
Cook, Benjamin
Cook, Harman
Cooper, Ellis
Cooper, John
Corbin, Peter
Cornelius, George
Cowan, Robert
Cowden, James
Cowden, William
Cradler, Jacob
Craget, Peter
Cragg, Thomas
Cragg, William
Craghead, Peter
Craighead, John
Crowell, Zenus
Crump, William

Dangger, Ralph
Daniel, George
David, Absolome
David, Elizabeth
David, Isaac
Davis, John
Davis, Jonathan
Davis, Joseph
Davis, Lewis
Davis, Peter
Davis, Philip
Davis, Solomon
Davis, William
Davis, Zachariah
Delancy, Samuel
Demoss, Thomas
Demoss, William
Denoon, Hartmon

Devin, Daniel
Dickens, Jeremiah
Dickenson, John
Dickerson, John
Dickson, Nathaniel
Dillian, Samuel
Dillian, William
Dillinham, William
Dillion, Jesse
Dilmon, Daniel
Dillmon, Daniel
Dillmon, Jacob
Divers, John
Dodd, William
Doggett, Chattin
Doggett, Thomas, Jr.
Doram, Hartman
Dottson, Micajah
Drake, John
Drake, William
Dudley, Gwin
Dunn, Michel
Dunn, William
Durst, Samuel
Duvall, Benjamin
Duvall, Lewis
Duvall, Marine
Duvall, Skinner

Earley, Jeremiah
Earley, Jubel
Early, John
Earnest, George
Eddy, Woolby
Edmons, Robert
Edmonson, Humphry
Edmonson, James
Edmonson, Richard
Edmonson, Richard, Jr.
Edwards, Abel
Edwards, Arthur
Edwards, James
Edwards, John
Elkins, Nathaniel
Ellis, John
Ellis, Joseph
Ellison, Amos
Ellison, John
Ellison, Thomas
Emmons, David
Epperson, John
Estis, Bottom
Estis, Elisha, Jr.
Estis, Elisha, Sr.
Estis, Joel
Estis, Mary
Estis, Richard
Estis, William
Eubanks, William
Evans, Thomas
Evans, William
Exceen, Daniel

Farley, Archibald
Farley, Daniel
Farley, Jeremiah
Farley, Matthew
Farley, Obediah
Farley, Stewart
Farley, Stephen
Ferguson, Alexander
Ferguson, George
Ferguson, Isham
Ferguson, John
Ferguson, John, Sr.
Ferguson, John, Jr.
Ferguson, William
Finney, Peter
Fitzsimmons, Patrick
Fitz, Simmons
Flory, Jacob, Jr.
Flory, Jacob, Sr.
Flory, Joseph
Fraser, John
French, Daniel, Jr.
French, Daniel, Sr.
French, James
French, John
Fristo, Robert
Frith, Joseph
Fuson, John

Gaskell, Enock
Geerheart, Leonard
Geerheart, Peter
Gillam, Peter
Gillaspy, Daniel
Gillaspy, John
Gisson, William
Glover, Richard
Good, Fanney
Gordon, Alexander
Gordon, Archibald
Graham, Archibald
Graham, Arthur
Graham, James
Granger, Joseph
Graveley, Joseph
Graves, William
Graves, William, Sr.
Gravevit, Obediah
Greer, Ann
Greer, Aquilla
Greer, Benjamin
Greer, David
Greer, Greenberry
Greer, James
Greer, Joseph
Greer, Moses
Greer, Moses, Sr.
Greer, Nathan
Greer, Thomas (Estate)
Greer, William
Greer, Uriah
Griffith, Benjamin
Griffith, Owen
Griffith, William
Grigg, John
Grimmet, Robert
Grimmit, John
Guthrey, Henry
Guttery, David
Guttery, Henry
Guttery, John

Hairston, Robert, Esq.
Hairston, Samuel
Hale, Benjamin
Hale, Elizabeth
Hale, John
Hale, Joseph
Hale, Pearson
Hale, Thomas
Hall, Isham
Hall, Jesse
Hall, Lansford
Hall, Randolph
Hall, William
Halle, George
Hambrick, Joseph
Hammock, Ephraim
Hammock, Peter
Hammon, Richard
Hammon, Thomas
Hancock, Thomas
Handy, Isham
Handy, James
Handy, John
Hanes, John
Hardway, Stanfield (Dinwoody)
Hardin, Elexus
Hargar, John
Harkrider, Conrad
Harris, John
Harris, John
Harris, William
Harston, Peter
Hartwell, John
Hatcher, Archibald
Hatcher, Elijah
Hatcher, Edward
Hatcher, Farley
Haynes, George
Haynes, Henry, Jr.
Haynes, Henry, Sr.
Haynes, Parmenus
Haynes, William
Heard, Jesse
Heard, Stephen
Heard, William
Hedge, Enock
Henderson, Samuel
Hewlet, Martain
Hickerson, Thomas
Hickmond, Jacob
Hickly, John
Hill, Swinfield
Hill, Thomas
Hill, Violet
Hodges, Abednego
Hodges, Isaiah
Hodges, Isham
Hodges, Joseph
Hodges, Josiah
Hodges, Robert
Hodges, William
Hoff, John
Hoff, Peter
Hogan, Ann
Hogard, James
Holdman, John
Holladay, Robert
Hollan, Arah
Holland, Asa
Holland, Arah
Holland, Peter
Holland, Peter, Jr.
Holland, Thomas
Holland, William
Holloway, John
Hook, John
Howser, Jasper
Hubbard, Eusabus
Hughes, Hugh
Hughton, Thomas
Hulcum, Uriah
Hunt, James
Hunt, Owen
Hunt, Thomas
Hunter, John
Hunter, Matthew
Hunter, William
Huston, Thomas
Hutcheson, Charles
Hutcheson, Paul
Hutcheson, Phillip
Hutcheson, William

Ingram, John
Ingram, William
Innes, Hugh

Jakes, John
James, Spencer James
Jamison, John, Jr.
Jamison, Thomas
Jamison, William
Jenney, James
Jenny, Isaac
Jett, Daniel
Jett, Thomas
Jimmeson, William
Jimmeson, Thomas
Jinkins, William
Johnson, George
Johnson, John
Johnson, John G.
Jones, Abraham
Jones, Daniel
Jones, David
Jones, Elijah
Jones, George
Jones, Henry
Jones, John
Jones, John (Dinwoody)
Jones, Joseph
Jones, Rachel
Jones, Richard
Jones, Robert, Sr.
Jones, Robert, Jr.
Jones, Thomas
Jones, Zachariah

Keal, John
Kean, John
Keen, Elisha
Keen, Rachel
Keen, John
Kearby, David
Kearby, Francis
Kearby, Joseph
Keaton, William
Kelley, Andrew
Kelley, George
Kelley, John
Kelley, William
Kemp, John
Kemp, Thomas
Kensey, Jacob
Kennedy, James
Kennedy, John
Kennedy, William, Jr.
Kennedy, William, Sr.
Kenney, Jacob
Kennon, James
Kenney, Jacob
Kennon, James
Kenny, Jacob
Kerby, Frances
Kerby, Jessey
Kerby, Jessey, Sr.
Kerby, John
King, Joseph
Kingary, Tobias
Kingrey, Jacob
Kinzey, Henry

Landling, Samuel
Langdon, John
Lasswell, Moses
Laswell, Peter
Law, Henry
Law, Jesse
Law, John, Jr.
Law, John, Sr.
Law, Nathaniel
Law, William
Lazana, John
Lebrook, John
Lemon, Isaac
Lewis, James
Lewis, Joseph
Lewney, John
Lilley, Robert
Lister, Henry
Livsey, George
Livsey, Holliday
Livsey, John
Livsey, Peter
Livsey, Thomas
Long, Christopher Charles
Long, Thomas
Long, William
Lovell, Marcum
Lovin, Henry
Loyal, Joseph Brumsick
Lumden, John
Lumsdin, Charles
Lumsdin, Jeremiah
Lumsdin, John

Lutterell, Samuel, Jr.
Luterell, Samuel, Sr.
Lyon, Edward
Lyon, Elisha

Maclary, Richard
Maddox, John
Maevey, James
Major, James
Malones, William
Mannin, Samuel
Marcum, James
Marcum, John
Marcum, Joseph
Marcum, Thomas
Marcum, William
Martin, Hugh
Martin, James
Martin, John
Martin, John Potter
Martin, William, Jr.
Martin, William
Mason, James
Mason, Robert
Mattox, Michal
Maveaty, William
Maveaty, Robert
Maxcy, Jeremiah
Maxcy, Josiah
Maxcy, Walter
McCoy, James
McCoy, Samuel
McCoy, Walter
McCoy, William
McCravey, Elias
McGehee, Holdin
McGeorge, Lawrence
McGinnes, John
McGrady, Loughlin
McKenzie, James
McNeal, Jacob
McVey, James
McWilliams, Hugh
Meador, Isham
Meador, Jesse
Meador, Job
Meador, Joel, Jr.
Meador, Joel, Sr.
Meador, John, Jr.
Meador, Jones
Meador, Joseph
Mealary, Richard
Menefee, George
Menefee, William, Jr
Menefee, William, Sr.
Miles, John
Miles, Samuel
Miller, Chrisler
Miller, Daniel
Miller, George
Miller, Isaac
Miller, Jacob
Miller, Jacob, Sr.
Miller, Jacob, Jr.
Miller, Joseph
Miller, Samuel

Miller, Thomas
Miller, Thomas, Jr.
Miller, Tobias
Miller, William
Mise, Benjamin
Moody, Thomas
Moore, Abraham
Moore, Jenny
Moore, Jesse
Moore, William
Mordica, Mosley
Morgain, David
Morgan, David
Mulling, William, Jr.
Mullendore, Abram
Mullendore, Jacob
Mullins, William
Mustanuff, George

Naff, Jacob
Napier, Ashford
Napier, Robert
Nelson, William
Nichols, Floyd
Noffsinger, John
Nole, John
Nole, Joshua
Nowlin, Elizabeth
Nowlin, William

Oaks, John
Oaks, William
Obrian, Dennis
Oldakers, James
Oldakers, Jacob
Overlen (Overlee), Conrad

Pain, Thomas
Parberry, James
Parker, Thomas
Parrot, Nathaniel
Parrot, Thorp
Pasley, George
Pasley, Robert
Pate, Anthony
Patterson, Samuel
Patterson, William Ryan
Pattison, Samuel
Pedegoy, Joseph
Pedigoy, Edward
Peek, Abell
Peek, David
Peek, John
Peek, Jonathan
Peek, Samuel
Perdue, Meshack
Perrey, George
Perryman, Richard
Perryman, Robert
Peter, Stephen
Peters, Michael
Pinkard, Charles
Pinkard, Jane
Pinkard, James

Pinkard, John
Plasture, Thomas
Poteet, William
Potter, Benjamin, Jr.
Potter, Benjamin, Sr.
Potter, Lewis
Potter, Thomas
Powell, Robert
Pratt, John
Prewett, David
Prewett, Elisha
Prewett, John
Price, Jonathan
Price, Joseph
Prillamon, Daniel
Prillamon, Jacob
Prillamon, Jacob, Jr.
Prillamon, John
Prunty, James
Prunty, Robert
Prunty, Thomas
Pugh, David
Purney, George

Radford, John
Radford, Richard
Ragland, Joel
Raines, Ambrous
Raley, Philip
Ramsey, Mary
Ramsey, Joseph
Ramsey, Thomas
Ranson, Charles
Ray, Moses
Ray, Philip
Randolph, Samuel
Read, Clemmons
Ready, Nathan
Real, Andrew
Real, George
Real, Michael
Redman, James
Redford, Richard
Redman, Stephen
Renno, John
Rentfro, Isaac
Rentfro, James
Rentfro, Jesse
Rentfro, John
Rentfro, Joshua
Rentfro, Mark
Rentfro, Moses
Rentfro, Samuel
Rentfro, William
Retter, Abraham
Retter, John
Richards, Edward
Richards, Robertson
Richards, Richard
Richards, Shadrack
Richardson, Amos, Sr.
Richardson, Benjamin
Richardson, Daniel
Richardson, Edward
Richardson, John
Richardson, Jonathan

Richardson, Randolph
Richardson, Aaron
Richardson, Stanhope
Richardson, Thomas
Richardson, Turner
Richeson, Amos
Richeson, Jonathan
Rives, Frederick
Rives, Burwell
Roasin, Charles
Roberts, John
Roberts, Richard
Roberts, Thomas
Robertson, John
Robertson, Richard
Robertson, William
Robinson, John
Robinson, Richard
Robinson, Thomas
Rodgers, George
Rodgers, Henry
Rodgers, James
Rodgers, Josiah
Ross, Alexander
Ross, Daniel
Ross, David
Ross, William
Ruble, Owen
Rudy, Daniel
Ryan, Darbey
Ryan, Nathan
Ryan, William

Sandford, George
Sandford, John
Saunders, Peter
Scruggs, John
Seekman, Peter
Seerun, John
Sellers, Nathan
Shateen, William
Sheardon, Philip
Sheridan, Philip
Sherwood, Robert
Shield, John
Shrewsberry, Jeremiah
Shockley, David
Short, John
Sickmon, Peter
Simmons, Charles
Simmons, Joseph
Simmons, Peter
Simmons, William
Simpkins, William
Slone, James
Slone, Patrick
Slone, Thomas
Slone, William
Smith, Daniel
Smith, Elizabeth
Smith, Gideon
Smith, John
Smith, Peter
Smith, Phillimon
Smith, Samuel
Smith, Stephen
Smith, Thomas
Smith, William
Sneed, John
Southerland, Alexander
Southerland, Phillip
Southerland, Samuel
Spangle, Daniel
Spangle, Daniel, Jr.
Spangle, George
Spencer, Benjamin
Spencer, William, Jr.
Standefer, Israel
Standefer, James, Sr.
Standefer, James, Jr.
Standefer, Luke
Standefer, William
Standley, Moses
Stanley, Richard
Stanley, William
Stanton, Thomas
Starkey, Joel
Starkey, John
Starkey, Jonathan
Starkey, Joshua
Staton, George
Stephens, John, Sr.
Stephens, John
Stephens, William
Stevenson, William
Stewart, Barey
Stewart, Charles
Stewart, David
Stewart, Daniel
Stewart, James, Jr.
Stewart, James, Sr.
Stewart, John
Stewart, William
Stinnet, James
Stinnet, William
Stockton, Robert
Stokes, James
Stokley, Leavy
Stone, Eucebus
Stone, Stephen
Storm, John
Storm, Micajah
Storm, Peter
Stover, Jacob, Jr.
Stover, Jacob, Sr.
Strange, James
Street, Anthony
Sullivant, John
Sullivant, Samuel
Sullivant, Samuel
Swanson, Nathan
Swanson, William
Swanson, William, Jr.
Swinney, Benjamin
Swinney, Edmund

Tarrant, Leonard
Taylor, John
Taylor, Robert
Taylor, Sarah
Taylor, Shelton
Teal, Adam
Teal, Nicholas
Terry, John
Terry, Thomas, Sr.
Terry, Thomas, Jr.
Terry, Thomas
Tharp, William
Thomas, David
Thomas, William
Thompson, Andrew
Thompson, Thomas
Thompson, William
Thornton, John, Sr.
Thornton, Luke
Thorp, William
Throut, Mary
Tolbot, Matthew
Toney, William
Tounsend, Thomas
Trent, Bryant
Trent, Henry
Trent, John
Trent, William
Trueman, William
Tuggle, Lodowick
Turley, James
Turnbull, George
Turner, Daniel
Turner, Isaiah
Turner, James
Turpin, Margaret
Tyree, John
Twiner, John

Underwood, Samuel

Vandivender, Abraham
Vernall, Richard
Vincent, Charles
Vincent, William
Vinson, Charles
Vinson, William
Wade, Bartlet
Wade, Moses
Waggoner, Milker
Waldin, Nathan
Walker, James
Walker, Joel
Walton, William
Ward, Daniel
Ward, James
Ward, John
Warren, Drury
Warren, Henry
Warren, Thomas, Sr.
Warren, William
Warren, Zacharian
Watts, Richard
Watts, Thomas
Wattson, Alexander
Webb, Jacob
Webb, James
Webb, Mary
Webb, Samuel
Webb, Smith
Webb, Theodorick
Webb, Theophalas
Webster, John
Webster, Luke
Webster, Samuel
Weeks, William
White, Jesse
White, Obediah
White, Page
White, P. Henry
Whitmore, Chearby
Whitmore, Jacob
Wilks, John
Willis, David
Willis, Isaiah
Willis, John
Willson, Edward
Willson, John
Willson, Joshua
Wimmer, Jacob
Wood, Ambrus
Wood, Peter
Wood, Stephen
Woods, Hugh
Woods, John
Woods, Robert, Jr.
Woods, Robert
Woodall, David
Woodall, John
Woodcock, Henry
Woodson, Shadrack
Wray, Daniel
Wray, James
Wray, Moses, Jr.
Wray, Moses, Sr.
Wright, George
Wright, James
Wright, John
Wright, William, Jr.
Wright, William, Sr.

Young, Allen Ridley
Young, James
Young, Peter
Young, Ridley
Young, Ridley Allen
Young, William

1786 FRANKLIN COUNTY TAX LIST. *Reprinted from Marshall Wingfield's* A History of Franklin County *by permission of the Virginia Book Company, Berryville, Virginia. Dr. Wingfield was born in Franklin County in 1893. He earned his doctor of divinity degree at Lincoln Memorial University of Tennessee in 1947 and doctor of literature at Ershkine College and Seminary, of South Carolina, in 1951. He was ordained a minister of the Christian church in 1912 and retired in 1958 after serving in many prominent capacities throughout America. He was author of at least eighteen books, coauthored an additional fourteen, and published numerous magazine articles and monographs. He was well known for his many public addresses; he returned to his native Franklin County to deliver an address on May 23, 1949, dedicating Booker T. Washington's birthplace as a Virginia shrine. This renowned minister, scholar, and author died May 7, 1961.*

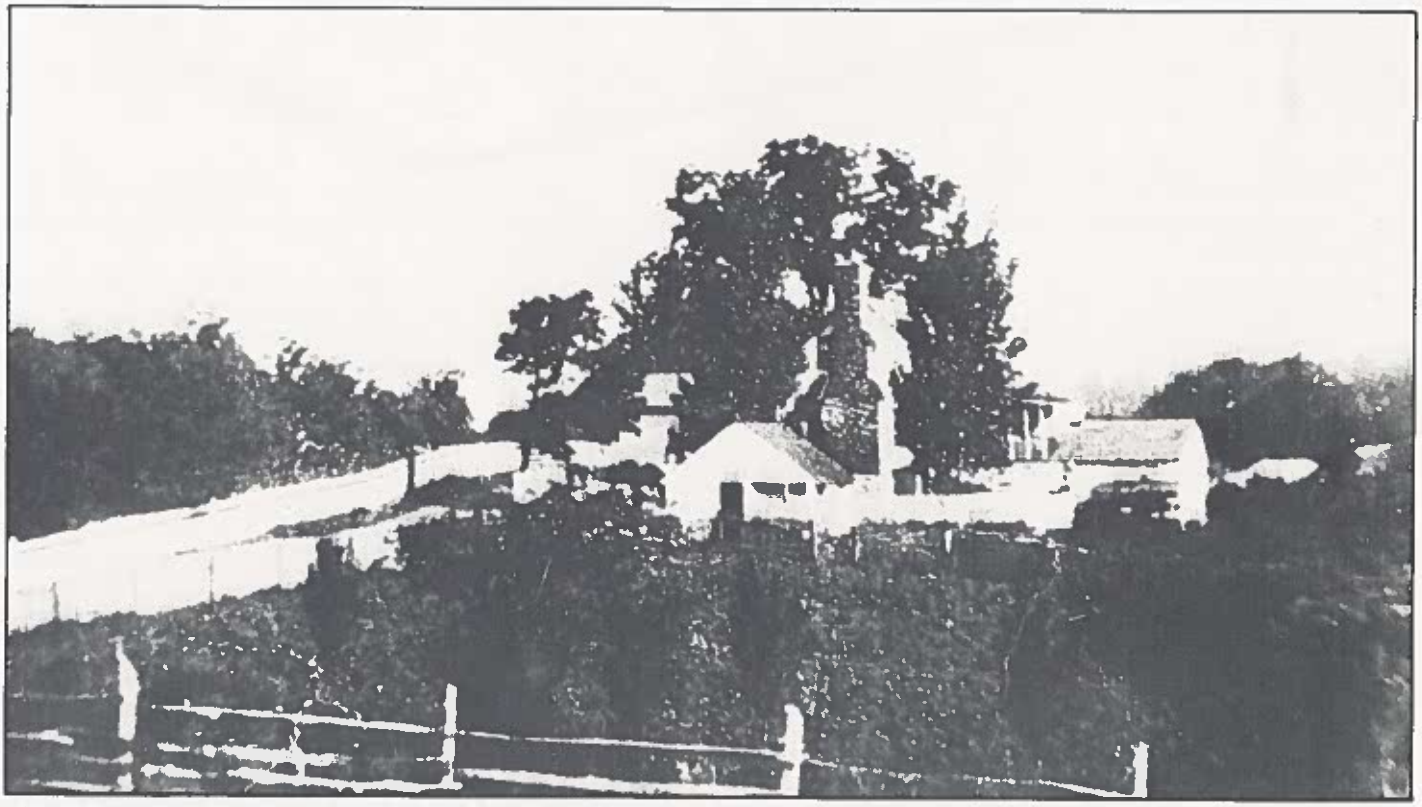
Early Roads in Franklin County

J. Francis Amos, M.D.

The importance of roads to the development of a county may best be appreciated by examining the early court records. Immediately one is impressed with the proportion of time taken with the "viewing" and repairing of roads. Rooted in ancient English practice, the system utilized by the early courts compelled those citizens near a road to work upon it several days yearly or make payment in lieu thereof. The road law of 1785 defined laboring tithables as "all male persons over the age of sixteen, except the master or owner of two or more labouring tithables, the owner of ironworks, millers, ferry keepers, and all such as the courts think proper to exempt through age or infirmity." Although many laborers simply put in their time, it was difficult for the overseer effectively to prevent socializing since he was usually of the same community and the same social group.

Roads into the area later to become Franklin County were carved into the wilderness as soon as the area became attractive to pioneer settlers in the 1740s. Prior to this the long hunters and Indian traders had ventured into this unsettled land using natural features, buffalo trails, game paths and Indian trails. Such was the case when the Batts and Fallam Expedition of 1671 probably crossed the northernmost part of present-day Franklin County. Later the long hunters, traders and earliest settlers developed "paths" to gain access to the area. These were little more than walking paths or riding trails for horseback travelers. "Rentfroes Path" to the present Callaway area was replaced by the development of roads to the area such as the Warwick Road of 1746. "The Catsteps Trail" over the southern end of Chestnut Mountain near Sydnorsville was never improved as a road, however, and persisted from the eighteenth century to the twentieth century as a trail only.

One of the earliest roads across Franklin County originated as the Great Warrior Path established centuries before the white man by the Iroquois of upstate New York. From New York it ran southward through the Carolinas and into Georgia. Used regularly by the Iroquois to make war on the enemy Catawba in the Carolinas, the trail was a definite hazard to the local Siouan tribes who were eventually forced to leave our area because of depredations at the hands of the Iroquois. With the incursion of the white man, an Indian war was averted only by the Treaty of Lancaster (Pennsylvania) in 1744 whereby the Indians gave up primary domain of the Warrior Path in return for guaranteed safe passage along its length. Already the path had been improved by the whites from Pennsylvania via Winchester to Staunton where it was known as the Great Road. In 1745 Orange County directed James Patton to extend the Great Road south. This segment known as the Indian Road extended south of the James and on to the waters of the Roanoke where it turned westward to the New River. This westward segment would later be extended by Daniel Boone to Kentucky and be known as the Wilderness Road. From the waters of the Roanoke near Big Lick (now the city of Roanoke) the original southern direction of the Great Warrior Path was extended south through Franklin County as the Carolina Road. Collectively, these segments (i.e., the



The Callaway Stage Stop along the Carolina Road near Dugwell. This stop along the Carolina Road (running in front of house) around 1820 was listed as being one mile north of the ford of Blackwater. It was destroyed by fire and the present C.A. Flora house is the third to occupy the site.

The Nine Sheet Map of Virginia (1859) by Ludwig Von Buchholtz showing the roads of Franklin County as they appeared during the first half of the nineteenth century.

Great Road, the Indian Road and the Carolina Road) made up the Great Wagon Road some 800 miles in length running from Philadelphia to present day Augusta, Georgia. So important was this road that the noted historian Carl Bridenbaugh stated it became "the most heavily traveled road in all America" during the last sixteen years of the colonial era.

Improvements to the Warrior Path from the waters of the Roanoke south were first made in 1746 by Morgan Bryan, a Pennsylvanian who lived in the Valley for a short while before cutting a wagon road to the Yadkin Valley in North Carolina, a task that required three months from the Shenandoah to the Carolina line. Following this route came Squire Boone and his young son Daniel from Pennsylvania to settle on the Yadkin where in 1755 Daniel would marry the daughter of Morgan Bryan. Later in life he would retrace his route to visit his kin at Boones Mill in present-day Franklin County. In 1753 a group of Moravians with a large Conestoga wagon set out from Pennsylvania to establish a congregation near present Winston Salem, North Carolina. In their diary they remarked as they passed through Franklin and Henry counties along Bryan's road that Morgan Bryan was the first to pass this way. Further evidence of this road is to be found in early Franklin County deeds that refer to "Morgan Bryan's Road" in southern Franklin County.

The Moravian diary of 1753 reveals that the Moravians came south from Evans' Mill (site of Roanoke Memorial Hospital), crossed Back Creek and Windy Gap Mountain, into present-day Franklin County. The early deed to a ridge just north of Crowell Gap, later called by some Raven's Ridge, refers to the Moravian Road crossing the mountain at this point. Progressing down the eastern side of the mountain to Maggotty Creek, the Moravians came upon Benjamin Reh (Wray) aged about ninety and his wife near one hundred. Little wonder that a 1795 traveler along the Carolina Road mentioned in this diary that in this area were some "long livvers." Travel was extremely difficult as the Moravians found it necessary to unload the wagon and carry the freight to the top of the mountain by hand, tie trees to the wagon going down to keep it from running over the horses and spend a considerable time pulling the wagon from mires or clearing the way for the wagon. From Boones Mill the Moravians followed Morgan Bryan's Road to the Blackwater River where it swung westward up the Blackwater close to the forks of the Blackwater (near Rentfro's Mill), thence over the end of Graveyard Knob and southward across the western part of the county, over Brown Hill and thence slightly more southeastward to the Smith River.

The Morgan Bryan road diverged slightly from the traditional course of the Carolina Road. The route of the Warrior Path most likely broke through the Blue Ridge at the Maggotty Gap (Boones Mill) as did the later Carolina Road. Evidence of this unimproved "path" is to be found when William McKaehay in 1747 entered 200 acres beginning "at the foot of the mountain where the path comes over it on Maggotty Creek thence down both sides." It is likely that Cahas Mountain at Boones Mill derives its name from this early settler.

From the Maggotty Gap the Carolina Road proceeded south of Boones Mill across Little Creek via route 731 past the Callaway Stagecoach Stop (C.A. Flora place), crossed route 641 at Dugwell, forded the Blackwater River at Doggetts, now called the Carolina Bottoms, proceeded up the Narrows and passed west of Grassy Hill where in 1769 the Chiswell Road (to present Wythe County) crossed the Carolina. It was here that an Anglican chapel was ordered to be built in 1769 beside the spring at the junction of the two roads. Here today stands a more recent "Carolina Springs Church" on Route 734. Continuing south the road crossed Route 640, as Route 800 to the Waid Stagecoach Stop at the ford of Pigg River. From there Route 802 proceeded to Waidsboro, crossed Route 40 and continued southeast via Route 607 to the top of Thornton Mountain, thence down the south side of the ridge crossing Route 607 and running east but parallel with this toward the Franklin-Henry County Line. South of Providence Church one may see White's Stagecoach Stop of 1806 through a clearing for the power line to the east of Route 607.

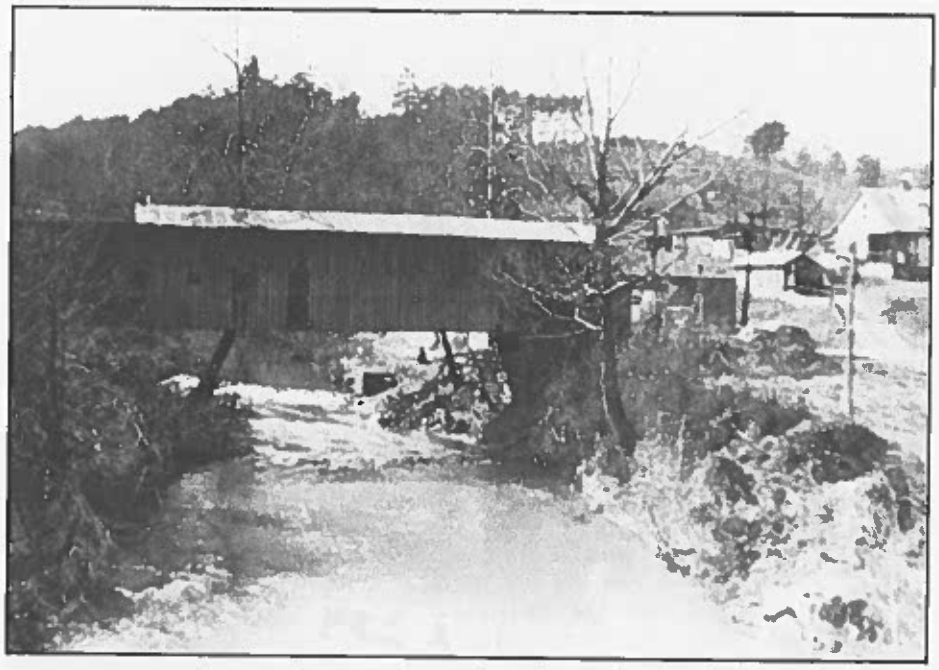
Since the Morgan Bryan Road veered westward south of the Blackwater, a more direct southward course was favored as the main route of the Carolina road. In 1754 Stephen Cole developed a road from Story Creek, where he lived, to John Hickey's store twelve miles south of the Smith River in Henry County. With the Coles land holdings on the Blackwater, Coles Road was quickly extended north and in the next decade became the primary route of the Carolina Road in lieu of the more westward and circuitous Morgan Bryan route.

The Carolina Road via Coles Road intersected Hickey's Road south of the Smith River in Henry County. John Hickey, an Irish merchant, had established a lucrative trading post south of the Smith River in 1746 and of necessity had developed a supply route in 1749 from the east through northern Halifax County, by Chatham and across Henry County in a manner correponding to Route 57. Hickey supplied the needs of the early settlers of southern Franklin County and became an extensive landholder along the Coles Road segment of the Carolina Road. It was at Hickey's Ordinary that George Washington spent the night and bought supplies at Hickey's store in 1756 as he proceeded up the Carolina Road from his inspection of the southern forts.

Along this same Carolina Road would pass the Cherokee, Count Casimir Pulaski and his revolutionary soldiers, Bishop Francis Asbury, Lorenzo Dow and other noted and unknown ministers, Daniel Boone, Andrew Jackson, frontiersmen, settlers, large transport wagons, droves of cattle and hogs, armies of blue and gray - for over one hundred fifty years, the face of America.

One of the earliest east-west routes directly into Franklin County was the Warwick Road, originating at Warwick on the James River south of Richmond. It was to this port that local tobacco was rolled and from which supplies from England were wagoned to the frontier. This road, corresponding to present Route 460, extended westward to New London west of Lynchburg and thence to Roanoke where it intersected the Carolina Road at Erwin Patterson's Stone House Trading Post near Cloverdale. This early road through western Lunenburg County was ordered to be built in 1746. A branch of this road, also known locally as the Warwick Road, was ordered in 1749 and split off near New London, came southwest to Maggotty Creek to "The Burying Place at the End of the Road," in a manner possibly approximating Route 122. Past Burnt Chimney it veered westward extending via Callaway to the Blue Ridge, crossing the mountain most likely by Nearway Ridge and on to the waters of Little River. By 1752 it was extended to the New River. This westward route was used extensively in 1754 to transport military supplies to the New River for use by Colonel James Patton for defense of the frontier. The Moravians in 1753 mentioned that the road to the west just south of present-day Boones Mill was a reasonably good road. New River settler William Thompson in 1768 used the Warwick Road to drive his herd of cattle eastward over the mountain where he proceeded south on the Carolina Road to market in Rowan County, North Carolina. It was along this Warwick Road that Fort Blackwater was constructed in 1756 at the forks of the Blackwater near present-day Callaway to intercept Indians crossing the Blue Ridge at the most logical passes. From Fort Blackwater George Washington proceeded eastward along the Warwick in 1756 to the Carolina Road where he went south, then returned northward along the Carolina on his return trip.

Another early road passing through Franklin County in an east-west direction was the Pigg River Road. Before 1760 this old road coursed across Pittsylvania County by Whittles, Green Bay Church, and Red Eye into Franklin County where it crossed the First Fork of Snow Creek. This corresponds today roughly to Route 809 to Route 890 near Peckerwood Level (contemporary with this road) and on to Route 715 and 718 in the Sontag area. It was in this area that the later Franklin-Pittsylvania Turnpike of 1838 utilized the course of the Pigg River Road. By 1793 the Dickinson community referred to it as the Pigg River Old Road. Snow Creek and Pigg River inhabitants in 1754 requested that the road be extended to the top of the Blue Ridge, and the new road may well have later been called the Chiswell Road as it crossed the Carolina Road. This



The Saunders Covered Bridge across Pigg River at Rocky Mount on the Pittsylvania-Franklin-Botetourt Turnpike. The bridge was built by Colonel Peter Saunders before the Civil War and was torn down in 1939 after the present concrete bridge was erected.

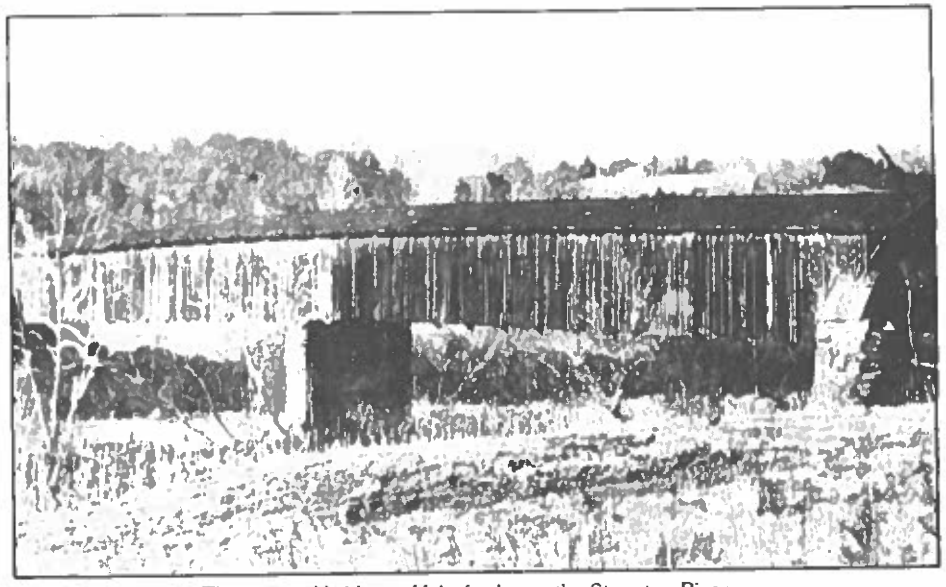
road apparently passed just west of Rocky Mount for in 1768 a "chappel of Ease" was ordered to be built near to John Wilcox's place (future iron mines in Rocky Mount) "on the Pigg River Road." In 1778 additional connections were ordered to be made from the Pigg River Road to the Bloomery - the ironworks established at present-day Rocky Mount by John Donelson in 1773. Another interesting road in 1778 was ordered to connect the Bloomery Road (probably Routes 902, 619, 724 and 220) to the Pigg River Road to intercept between Chestnut Creek and Doe Run. This correlates with Route 718 south of Sydnorsville to Route 619 where Route 718 became the Pigg River Road.

The development of early roads to the ironworks at Rocky Mount is well understood if one considers that merchant John Hook at New London was importing iron pots and ironware from England in 1771 and transporting it by wagon from the port of Warwick to the frontier of Bedford and what is now Franklin. The establishment of an ironworks here in 1773 must have been a boon for the frontier for this much needed but difficult to transport commodity. Access to the furnace is reflected by the numerous court orders for roads to this establishment prior to the formation of the county in 1786; roads were ordered to be built from the ironworks to the top of the Blue Ridge (Barton's Spur), to the foot of Fork Mountain, to the head of Mason's Creek, to the Pine Spur of the Blue Ridge, to the head of Beaver Creek, to the Blackwater Road, to Bedford Courthouse via the lower end of Grassy Hill, to the ford of Hatchet Run, to Blackwater River, to Henry Courthouse, to Snow Creek, to Peter Saunders's (Bleak Hill), to the head of Pigg River, to the Pittsylvania County line, to Captain Wood's Path, and to the ford of Chestnut Creek, among others. When the new county of Franklin was carved from Bedford and Henry in 1786 there already existed a network of roads extending to the geographic center of the new county like spokes of a wheel converging on the hub -the Washington Ironworks. Thus was the county seat predestined with the formation of the new county.

By the mid-nineteenth century, road-building had changed throughout the commonwealth. With the formation of the Virginia Board of Public Works, state engineers applied more technical assistance in laying out and surveying major roads. Turnpikes were established throughout the state and Franklin County was no different. One such turnpike was the famed Pittsylvania, Franklin and Botetourt Turnpike, established in 1838 and known locally as the Danville Turnpike. Extending from Danville to Rocky Mount where it crossed the covered bridge over Pigg River and up Main Street it proceeded on to Fincastle by way of Big Lick. Construction cost for the dirt turnpike from Danville to Rocky Mount was $300 per mile with the famous Claudius Crozet as the principal engineer. It proved to be a highly utilized artery of trade; along this dusty road traveled droves of cattle, horses, sheep and hogs, flocks of turkeys, heavily loaded covered wagons of Floyd County cabbage, apples and produce of every description. Tollgates were placed every ten to fifteen miles with the following rates: Horses, 5¢ per head; persons, 5¢ each; tobacco, 5¢ per hogshead; four-wheeled vehicles, 25¢ each; two-wheeled vehicles, 10¢ each; neat cattle, 5¢ per head; and hogs, 1¢ per head. Today one may view an almost unchanged segment of this road, probably preceded in this area by the Pigg River Road, Route 715 as it traverses the northern end of Chestnut Mountain. Today this route extends as Routes 715, 718, 619, 220, and 919 to the north.

Another turnpike of mid-nineteenth century was the Franklin-Floyd Turnpike of the Rocky Mount Turnpike Company. This improved road across the Blue Ridge provided the highlands with access to more eastern markets through connections to the Pittsylvania, Franklin and Botetourt Turnpike and the Carolina Road. The Rocky Mount Turnpike Company in 1849 established the original turnpike from New London to Rocky Mount along Route 122 by Hales Ford. This was extended to Floyd (Route 640) and almost immediately plans were made to extend this to the Seven Mile Ford in Smyth County. Tobacco magnate R. J. Reynolds recalled as a teenager in Patrick County during the Civil War his trip to the Great Kanawha Saltworks above Charlestown, West Virginia, some one hundred twenty miles distant. His journey up the Carolina Road and the Rocky Mount Turnpike was a common route for acquiring salt. The two roads intersected on the ridge above the Waid Stagecoach Stop, and a former slave at this place recalled the last significant traffic over the Carolina Road before the coming of the railroads as four-horse covered wagons headed south carrying salt.

With the coming of the railroads, there would be a great change in the major roads of America. After the Civil War the local traffic reflected the destitution and poverty that abounded. Flop-eared mules and oxen with homemade wagons replaced the spirited steeds and majestic Conestoga wagons pulled by five or six horses of a century earlier. Later with the coming of the automobile, the roads were no longer suitable for drovers or even for horse-drawn vehicles. Wooden covered bridges gave way to concrete and steel and the bucolic roadside shade trees were cut for safety's sake. Beauty gave way to utiltiy, tranquility to speed. By 1932 improved roads financed by gas taxes, for the most part had lost their names and been given route numbers. New names appeared only transiently such as the National Highway of the first quarter of the twentieth century, which utilized major north-south highways through the county. Forgotten by name and remembered by numbers only as a necessity, these old roads of Franklin County remain as an important historical link to our past and a monument to the efforts of our forefathers for over two hundred years to establish an effective highway system for this county. □



The covered bridge at Halesford over the Staunton River.

J. FRANCIS AMOS, M.D., *the son of the late Jesse S. and Helen Hutcherson Amos and a native of Franklin County, is a practicing family physician in Rocky Mount and past president of the Virginia Academy of Family Physicians. He has a avid interest in local history, having served as president of the Franklin County Historical Society, and is presently chairman of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

John Hook, Storekeeper

Warren Moorman

When Franklin County merchant John Hook died in 1808 it took twenty-three legal pages to list his plantation property, Hales Ford store contents, slaves, and marketable whiskey, rum, and brandy. It took an additional twenty-six pages to name all of those who owed him for purchases at his various stores. In a new country where the opportunity to get rich existed for anyone willing to work hard, John Hook had succeeded far beyond his expectations. He indeed epitomized the Horatio Alger "rags to riches" success story.

Born in Glasgow, Scotland, in 1745, Hook was the fourth son of Henry Hook, an ambitious but apparently not very successful soap manufacturer. It reflects well on his parents, however, that their six children were educated to a level offering them improved prospects in life. John proved to be especially bright and ambitious — by the age of thirteen he had acquired sufficient clerical skill to be accepted by a Glasgow import-export firm as an indentured apprentice clerk-storekeeper in Virginia.

Hook arrived in Richmond in 1758, at a time when Scots were challenging the English trading monopoly with Virginia. He seems to have spent his first five years at Warwick, the deep-water port in Chesterfield County just below Richmond. Reflecting a typical Scottish characteristic — pessimism — Hook wrote to his brother Duncan in 1763 asking for L20 so that he could leave Virginia. At the same time he wrote his brother Thomas that "the encouragement that I now have — with the prospect of getting consignments from you and Duncan fixes my mind entirely on staying in this colony." This type of ambivalence marked Hook's early career. But throughout his career Hook constantly devised ways to make a profit for himself using money advanced by others.

This old structure now standing behind the Moorman house off Route 40 near Halesford is the remains of a part of John Hook's store of 1784, originally located across the highway. Hook was a contentious Tory sympathizing Scot who carried on an extensive mercantile business in northeastern Franklin County.

The summer of 1766 proved pivotal in the life of the ambitious twenty-one year old. Hook had been in Virginia eight years and still felt that he had no dependable friends and had accumulated very little wealth. He was now convinced of something he had written his father almost two years earlier "that a young man without a fortune or good friends will be all his lifetime at it before he can make any more money than he can just live on." He was preparing to leave Virginia when William and James Donald agreed to let him manage their store in the recently created village of New London in Bedford County.

Hook remained with the Donalds until 1771, when he left to form a partnership with David Ross, a Petersburg merchant and perhaps the wealthiest man in Virginia. Hook stayed in New London, where he built a new store and house and married Elizabeth Smith on February 29, 1772.

Times were prosperous for John Hook, and he worked peaceably at his favorite occupation — making money — until hostilities began between the colonies and the mother country in 1775. Perhaps he opposed the Revolution because he knew war would disrupt trade, or perhaps he truly was loyal to the Crown. Regardless of the reason, Hook soon found himself in trouble with local patriots. On May 23, 1775, the Bedford County Committee of Safety was organized. Virtually its first action was to summon John Hook to answer charges of treasonous disloyalty to Virginia.

Hook weathered that particular storm, but throughout the war he seemed always to be at the center of controversy. In the meantime, his worst fears about the disruption of trade and its effects on the economy were realized. He had to press for payments and became increasingly involved in litigation. One side effect that was not altogether objectionable to him was that he acquired a great deal of real estate and other property as a result of his successful suits. He began to develop a plantation south of the Staunton River at Hales Ford, in what later became Franklin County. After he moved slaves there who cleared the land, Hook became a planter. Several years later, using sketches he had made, he had a house and store constructed about a half mile from the river; he and his family moved there in the summer of 1784.

The often-told story of the New London Beef Trial forms the basis for a bit of John Hook sarcasm found in a letter he wrote to Patrick Henry asking Henry to represent him in a boundary dispute near Muscle Shoals in what is now Alabama. After several of his steers had been impressed by an army commissary during the Revolution, Hook sued the state at the end of the war to recover the cost of the animals. Henry represented Virginia and his eloquence as usual won the case. Who could have denied him after he described the wonderful American victory at Yorktown and asked, "What notes of discord are those which disturb the general joy in the acclamation of victory? They are the notes of John Hook, hoarsely bawling through the American camp, 'Beef, beef, beef!' " Hook concluded his letter to Henry, "If you will do half as much for me as you did against me in the beef case we will easily win this case."

From 1779 to 1791 John Hook tried unsuccessfully to settle the accounts of his joint business venture with David Ross. Ross would "make demands" and Hook would "make every effort possible." Finally in 1791 Ross submitted the "breach of partnership to the high court of chancery in Richmond," Judge George Wythe presiding. Hook proved himself a master of delay by claiming that he could not produce the partnership's books due to his move to Hales Ford, heavy rain damage suffered en route to Richmond, and multiple errors made by some of his clerks and storekeepers. But later in 1791 the court ruled that Hook's possessions be sequestered and all portable goods be taken eighteen miles to Rocky Mount to be sold at public auction. The Franklin County sheriff locked up Hook's store, blacksmith shop, and distillery. Before the sheriff got there, however, Hook had hidden his ledgers.

An aerial photo of the original Hook plantation shows its location near Halesford Bridge and Smith Mountain Lake. The original store was east of Highway 40 but later in the mid-nineteenth century part of it was moved to served as a dependency to the house across the road.

The case dragged on for years and in that time Hook hired several of the better known Richmond lawyers including James Innes, Edmund Randolph, Philip Norborne Nicholas, William R. Davie, and John Marshall. Hook testified that some of the records he had eventually turned over to Ross's agents and attorneys had had pages removed and alterations made on entries. Court proceedings showed that Hook had kept his records meticulously with many duplicates and some revised duplicates of duplicates. He cleverly questioned witnesses and the attorneys casting a shadow of doubt on Ross and always portraying himself as the badly used and abused underdog. But he could plead poverty one moment and then boast of "plenty of land warrants" the next.

Finally in March 1808 when Hook had made a trip to Richmond to attend court and was returning home, he grew ill and stopped at Abbott's Ordinary in Buckingham County. Realizing his strength was ebbing he wrote his last will and testament and died soon thereafter. Slaves were sent to take his body home and tradition has it that he was buried near a large boxwood east of the site of his home and store. It was not until 1850, long after the deaths of both principals, that the high court of chancery handed down the final settlement of the Ross-Hook Company assets.

By the time of the Civil War, Hook's Hales Ford home was owned by Llewellyn H. Powell. During the war Union general David Hunter advanced southeast from Staunton to New London, and he and his army took up positions on the west side of Lynchburg. Siege scouts were sent through the surrounding country in search of provisions. Mrs. Powell was in the house with only her children when a band of Yankee soldiers arrived and forced her to permit a search of the place. Knowing of the approach of Union troops she had hidden hams under loose attic boards. A soldier started up the winding backstairs to the attic crawl space. Whether it was Mrs. Powell's bold dare to the soldier to "look for yourself," the dark winding stairs, or the oppressive heat of the closed space that caused him to hesitate will never be known. Instead, he asked if food was hidden there. Mrs. Powell gave him a firm level-eyed "no." He then closed the attic door and departed with the equally empty-handed soldiers from other parts of the house. The weather was very hot on June 17-18, 1864. Ham fat melted leaving outlines on the front bedroom ceiling, which even now are still clearly visible, but did not soak through enough to be observed by the search party using the front stairs.

During the "distress times" after the Civil War Llewellyn Powell placed Hook's Hales Ford property for sale. Dr. John Addison Moorman purchased the house and 236 acres by the Bedford-Rocky Mount Turnpike for $2,110 on July 6, 1875. It is not known if the structure now called the Powell-Moorman House is all or just part of the dwelling John Hook had constructed in 1783-1784. The only changes that have been made since the 1850s are the addition of a small pantry back of the kitchen and a second story on the front porch made about 1890.

Tradition has it that John Hook's store stood on the south side of the Rocky Mount-Bedford Turnpike until about 1850 when then owners Davis and Nowlin or Louellen H. Powell had it moved to its present location as an additional slave house.

In the late 1970s the Colonial Williamsburg Foundation decided to reconstruct a store that a Mr. Greenhow had operated on Duke of Gloucester Street two hundred years ago. Existing records and archaeological excavations revealed the location and dimensions of the Greenhow building, but nothing was known of the interior. While working at the Virginia State Library, Foundation historian John Hemphill stumbled upon John Hook's 1772 drawings of his New London store. Using Hook's sketches, Williamsburg archaeologists, architects, curators, and historians were able to make blueprints so authentic that Mr. Greenhow and John Hook would have felt perfectly at home in the reconstructed store. Mary Miley Theobald, products manager for the Historic Area, published an account of "Mr. Greenhow's return to business" in "Colonial Williamsburg," revealing the meticulous effort devoted to such projects.

John Hook lived an eventful life during a heroic era of American history. He moved from the poverty of a back street in Glasgow to a large Virginia plantation and title to thousands of acres extending far down the Tennessee River. He was the father of six children, but with the death of his grandson, Dr. John Hook Griffin, of Salem, Virginia, in 1878, his name disappeared. All that remains are the 103 boxes containing 7,387 items relating to his business career in Virginia; a few brief references scattered through historic writings; an unpublished master's thesis by Dr. Willard Pierson, Jr., at Duke University; a Virginia State Historic Highway Marker in New London; and what is probably the remains of his store at Hales Ford. The character and ability, the determination to work his way out of poverty, the keen business and legal mind displayed in his letters and notes, his unshakable courage in the face of threats all reveal a singular man struggling through troubled times. □

WARREN L. MOORMAN, M.D., *was born, educated, and still lives in Salem, but as a youngster he spent most of his summers at the home of his grandfather Doctor John Addison Moorman, the Hook-Moorman home in Franklin County. There he grew up with family stories about John Hook whetting his appetite on the subject. He has done extensive research and became an authority on the Scotsman as well as owner of the Hook plantation. Doctor Moorman is well known for his active interest in history and is a member of both the Roanoke and Franklin County Historical societies.*

Ethnic Origins in Franklin County, Virginia

Frank Hurt, H.D.

The study of the origin of ethnic groups in Franklin County affords insights into a substantial cultural heritage. The early frontier owed its striking characteristics to the many pioneers who transformed its virgin soils and resources into viable life and institutions. Successive waves of explorers, hunters, speculators, and yeoman farmers searched for land and freedom. Their strengths, combined with individualism and a practical turn of mind, enabled them to grasp the challenges of the frontier environment. Bold, shrewd, and inventive, the pioneers used their personal initiatives and acumen to deal with the uncertainties of existence on the frontier. John Marshall said of them, "Those who explore and settle...are generally bold, hardy and adventurous..., whose minds as well as their bodies are fitted to encounter the danger of fatigue; their object is the acquisition of property and they usually succeed." Leaving behind the social and economic mores of the plantation system, emigrants sought a chance to locate their families under different conditions with hope for a better life.

The early factor in the metamorphosis of the frontier was the migration westward from the historic section of eastern Virginia. The allure of land unincumbered by feudal dues, quitrents, and absentee landlords and unspoiled by soil exhaustion created patterns of emigration that had an important bearing on the actions that led later to the formation of the county.

Consisting primarily of English stock, the early emigrants settled in the less rugged, sand-clay part of the lower Piedmont plateau. Their time-honored heritage, derived from the English common law, plantation mode of agriculture, established religious dogma, and democratic tendencies, imparted imprints on the social, political and institutional life. Leadership patterns, however, were characterized more by direct and vigorous action than by aristocratic tradition. Resorting to the cultivation of tobacco, cotton, flax, and grain and the hewing and gathering of forest products, the yeoman farmer added credence to the view that the early pioneers had moved westward in search of freedom from the rigid patterns of life in eastern Virginia.

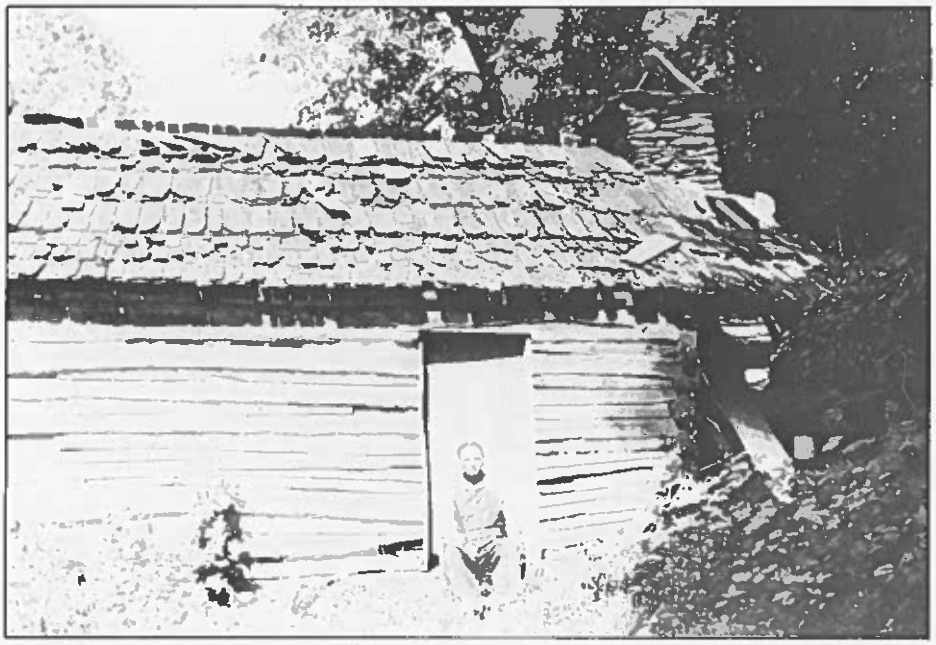
The immigration along the frontier in the eighteenth century was composed largely of German stock, known colloquially as the Dutch (Deutsch). While these pioneers made their way to the hinterland against a background of peaceful intent, they were not oblivious to the Indians and the English to the east. Moving into the unoccupied territory of the Roanoke, Blackwater and Pigg River valleys, they had passed through the Great Valley of Virginia from the colony of Pennsylvania and followed the water courses into new territory.

Although the frontier was rugged and exacted a heavy toll, the Dutch pioneers braved the vicissitudes by adapting to these changes in their lives. Known for their ethic of incessant work and self-sufficient economy, these pioneers brought with them the prospect for success and prosperity. They were a genuine and dedicated class of people, who, by their efforts, made grass and clover grow on cleared land that had never before known the stroke of the hand of man. James K. Paulding, writing from the South, observed, "they save all that they make, they work harder...to save something everyday and consider that (they have) lost a day when (they have) not saved a penny."

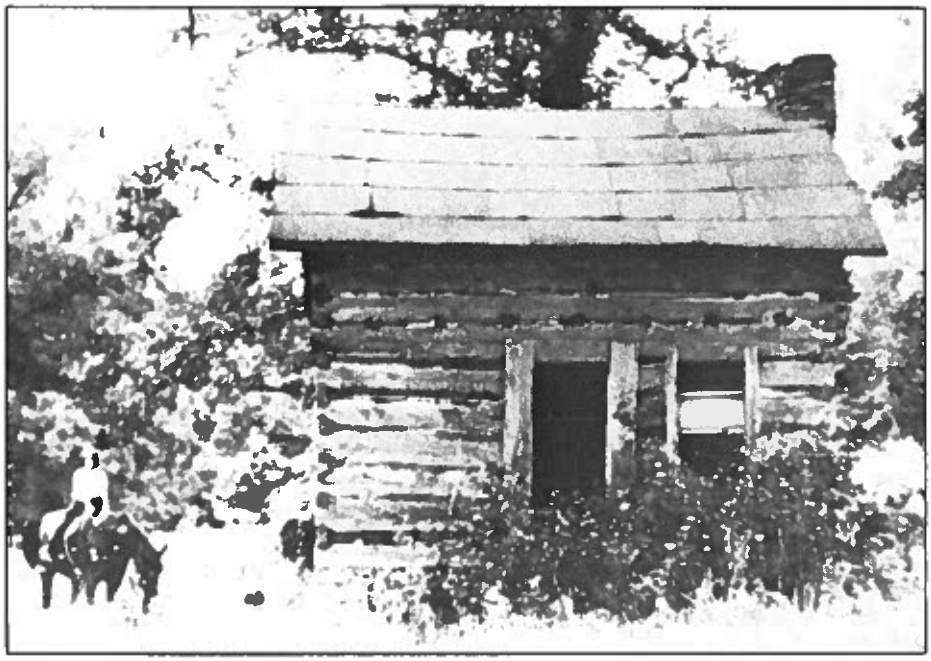
Many of the Germanic people to settle northwestern Franklin County were of the German Baptist faith.

They generally were politically apathetic. The Anti-Baptist philosophy of the post - Thirty Year War epoch in Europe created an element of antipoliticism that was in consonance with the tragedy and suffering in the Dutch settlers' historic background. There is also some evidence to support a view that these pioneers were reluctant to take an adverse position against the British Crown, which had provided them with an opportunity to search for land and freedom in North America. As a freeholder, the Dutch pioneer exercised the privilege of the franchise with a spirit of prudence and responsibility. The quiet virtues of the home and the demanding nature of the duties of life, however, permitted the Dutch to live their lives as conscience and duty required. "Wherever they appeared, they seemed to be seeking some secluded spot, where, undisturbed by any other sect, they might enjoy liberty unrestrained, and worship God after their own fashion."

Had they been of sufficient numbers, they might have been able to preserve their native language permanently. Stretched thinly along the river valleys, surrounded by the English in the lower Piedmont Plateau and the Scotch in the upper country, they were faced with the choice of conducting their legal and commercial affairs in the ruling



This log cabin on Shooting Creek is typical of those constructed in mountainous southwestern Franklin County by early Scotch-Irish settlers. Known locally as the Isaac Underwood cabin, it was constructed of materials readily at hand and of minimal expense to the builder.



A typical slave cabin behind the Wade (Woodson Ramsey) house at Sydnorsville.

language, English. They held steadfastly, however, to their own language in their churches and schools until well into the early part of the nineteenth century.

They held tenaciously to their system of agriculture as well. Their forefathers had abandoned the medieval "three-field" communal system with its central village and adopted the privately owned farm. The plantation mode of land tenure, centering in and about the fact of slavery, did not fit into their religious beliefs and customs. With a successful background of achievement in a religious, social, economic and self-reliant lifestyle, the Dutch gave a distinctive and uncommon contribution to the development of the county.

As the frontier advanced from the Tidewater section, the lower Piedmont Plateau and the river valleys, another group of pioneers, the Scotch, known demographically as the Scotch-Irish, migrated from the colonies of New York and Pennsylvania between 1730 and 1780, settling in the rugged foothills of the Blue Ridge Mountains. They were a part of the influx of immigrants to the American colonies from the counties of Ulster in North Ireland, and had migrated to Ulster prior to the opening of opportunities to emigrate to the New World. Many of them were Protestants escaping from the infringement of their liberty and the economic niggardliness of their environment. Settling largely in Pennsylvania under the auspices of William Penn, they later emigrated to the Appalachian region of Virginia about the time that the forces of social and political revolution were receiving recognition and emphasis. Individualistic, bold, shrewd, restless, and often contentious towards outsiders, they were, nevertheless, warm and hospitable to family and friends and endowed with a practical turn of mind. The log cabin was "where a man was free to move about, where he lived by his skill and wits, where drudgery for wages was unknown, where no man was his master."

While isolated and practically without means of communication, they were able to cope with their new environment. The appearance among them of leaders, who were elevated in the esteem of their neighbors by their native ability and character, created a sense of cooperation and confidence. Although there were no trained ministers or teachers, interested laymen and elders often came forward to cultivate their innate talents and thereby meet their community's needs. An austere environment, therefore, was not bereft of concerned and responsible leaders. The love of home, family, and personal liberty exemplified those immutable pillars upon which community and safety rested.

Tradition and social custom set the pattern in the more mountainous area for generations. While devoted primarily to the development of their own land and occasionally a run of "spiritus fermenti," they possessed enough vision and common sense to realize a necessity for devoting themselves as well to the interests of their neighbors. The community about them extended beyond their immediate relatives to long-tested neighbors and friends. The doctrine of predestination, which was widely held by the descendants of John Calvin, established austere patterns of ethical conduct, and partly excused practice at variance with established rules of law. Resentment against civil authority, it was believed, caused them to seek the freedom to rear their families, conduct personal relations and engage in modes of behavior compatible with social custom.

The relationships among the ethnic groups along the three frontiers of Franklin County, intermingled with elements of Irish, French Huguenots, and blacks, were usually friendly, but not always harmonious. The Scots settlers of the upper country adapted easily to their fellow compatriots, the Dutch farmers. While cooperating with the Dutch, by fending off Indians and exchanging goods, the Scots had less contact and intercourse with the English, whose system of agriculture occupied a lesser place in their culture and economy. Centuries of conflict among the English, Scots, and Irish, moreover, had shaped attitudes as a lingering heritage along the frontier. It may be said that only in the latter part of the nineteenth and in the early part of the twentieth century did tendencies towards differences of origin give way to common interests.

Two hundred years after the birth of Franklin County, the attainment of equality by all of its citizens reflects a major accomplishment. This progress has lifted its citizens to a lofty position in accommodating themselves to the challenge and requirements of citizenship. The gospel of work and service emphasized by Booker T. Washington, a native black citizen of the county, created a sense of pride and racial enterprise as a basis of adjustment and co-operation.

The Supreme Court's time-honored decision in the case of Oliver Brown vs. Board of Education of Topeka, Kansas, ordered the end of segregation in public schools. This action, together with other legal and social processes, has encompassed phases of change, not only in the lives of black, but the overall community of the county. With a unique background of achievement in famalial, social, religious and economic endeavor, the black citizens, along with the white, look to the future with hope and confidence.

Over the last two centuries, Franklin County has been transformed from a wilderness into a prosperous agricultural and industrial community. Devotion to the rights of individuals had led to the perpetuation of a rich heritage and qualities of fine citizenship. Franklin County, however, greets its bicentennial with a sense of optimism, courage, and pride. Benjamin Franklin's concept of the dignity and worth of the individual, as shared by blacks and whites alike, is central to the determination of its citizens to retain rights and choices, and freely and fully enjoy a heritage based upon liberty and justice. □

FRANK B. HURT, H.D., *a native of Ferrum, has retired and returned to Ferrum College after a distinguished career in education. He served as associate professor of political science at Western Maryland College from 1930 to 1965 when he was named professor emeritus and as lecturer at University College, University of Maryland. He returned to Ferrum College in 1965 to head the division of Social Sciences and there was elected professor emeritus in 1970. He is the author of* A History of Ferrum College *and* The Heritage of the German Element in Franklin County, Virginia, *in the Eighteenth Century, a member of the Franklin County Historical Society (president, 1969-1970), and a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

Migration Patterns

Gertrude Casler Mann

Colonists moving beyond the narrow, settled, Atlantic coastal strip discovered that Indian trails crossed the land in every direction. Many are followed today by our major highways.

Indians traveled single file, so their paths were narrow. As traders moved along them, trails were widened to accommodate pack trains and later roads were cut to accommodate wagons. Daniel Boone is said to have used "Buffalo streets" in laying out the Wilderness Road in 1775.

The Appalachians were a formidable barrier that funneled travelers south through the valleys between the mountain ranges to the heads of the Holston, Clinch, and Powell valleys into Tennessee and Kentucky. The Wilderness Road turned northwest, after passing through the Cumberland Gap, going to Crab Orchard, Danville, Harrodsburg, Bardstown, Bulletts Lick and Shippingport to the falls of the Ohio at Louisville, Kentucky.

The Iroquois war path came up the Shenandoah Valley and continued south into the North Carolina-Tennessee area. A branch turned west near Staunton, Virginia, to join the New River-Kanawha path and continued to Point Pleasant, across the Ohio River near Gallipolis and went on to old Chillicothe, the Shawnee town.

Another path turned off at the Staunton water gap to cross Franklin County in a southwesterly direction and continued through Henry County, and on to Madison, North Carolina, where it forked. The west fork went to the Mocksville area where it turned west again to go to Boone, Sycamore Shoals, and Bristol, Tennessee. The east fork continued on, passing near Greensboro to join the Occaneechi Trading Path (the Catawba Path) near Charlotte, North Carolina.

The Occaneechi Trading Path began at Bermuda Hundred on the James River and ran south to old Fort Henry (Petersburg), then south crossing the Roanoke River east of Occaneechi Island (Buggs Island) and from there south to the Charlotte, North Carolina, area and on to Augusta, Georgia. A branching trail led from the trading path to Wilmington, North Carolina, on the coast.

The major trading path continued on from Augusta with branches going to Charleston, South Carolina, Savannah, Georgia, and Saint Augustine, Florida. From Augusta, the trails crossed Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi to Natchez, Vicksburg, and Greenville on the Mississippi River. The

Mountaineers such as this one from Western Franklin County traveled with all their belongings to establish a new home with prospects for a brighter future.

Natchez Trace went north to Nashville (French Lick). At Nashville, trails went west to Memphis, then northwest to Paducah, Kaskaskia, and Saint Louis, Missouri. Going east, it passed through Knoxville, and went on northeast to Kingsport, Tennessee. Going south, the Natchez Trace went to Birmingham and Mobile, Alabama and, east to Chattanooga, Tennessee.

The Indian path through West Virginia left the Valley road in Virginia near Christiansburg and west to cross the New River at Ingles Ferry and on to the Virginia-West Virginia border. From there it went to Beckley and across to the New River-Kanawha path.

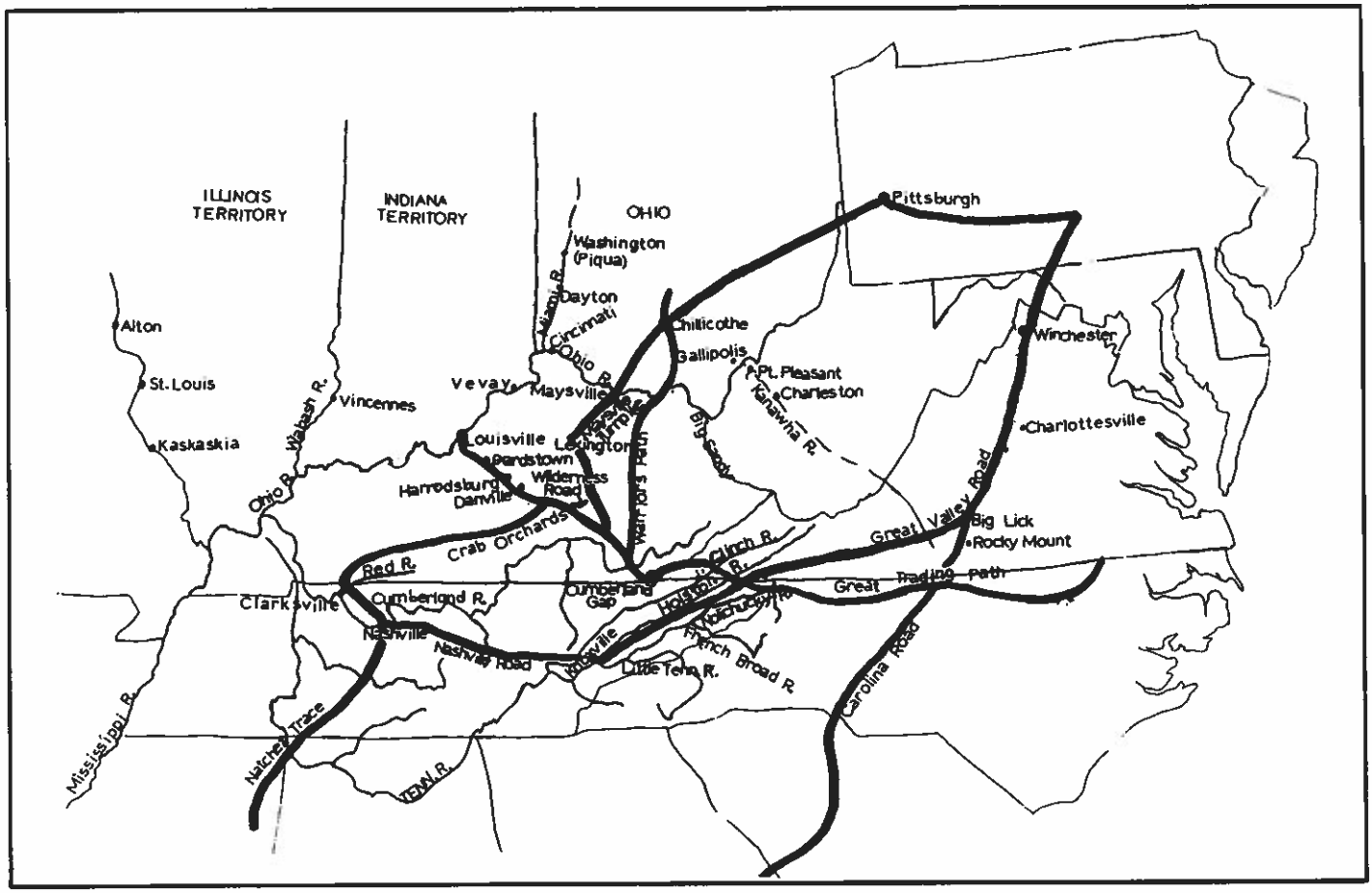
"An old Indian trail" is described as going from the Bluestone River across Flat Top Mountain and down the divide between Guyandotte and Coal rivers, along the top of Cherry Pond Mountain where the trail divided. One branch continued down the West Fork of Coal River and the other down the Pond Fork of the same, now in Boone County, West Virginia. The trail went on across the Ohio River to Chillicothe, Ohio. "Another West Virginia trail followed the Dry Fork of the Tug Fork of the Sandy River to its mouth on the Ohio River." Captives from Virginia were most likely taken by these trails and the northern branch to captivity at Chillicothe and Fort Detroit.

The Kentucky Road, called "The Buffalo Trace" and said to have been twenty feet wide in places, went from southern Indiana (about opposite Louisville, Kentucky) to Vincennes on the Wabash River. This road connected with the Warriors Path at Louisville.

Another Ohio war trail ran northwest between the Scioto and Great and Little Miami rivers to the Maumee River and on to Detroit. Still another ran from the path on the south side of Lake Erie, south through Columbus and Chillicothe, "the Dark and Bloody Ground," to join the Wilderness Road. There were multitudinous trails that went to salt licks, medicinal springs, hunting and fishing grounds, sugar trees, native fruit trees, and others, as well as the villages of friends and enemies.

After the Revolution, migration began in earnest. It is said that thousands of people passed through the Cumberland Gap.

There were large, extended families like William Cook's, Elder Jacob Miller's, Meshack Perdue's kin and the Greers; single families traveling alone such as the Mark Dents; neighboring families like those on the eastern Blackwater River in Franklin County;



A map showing major routes and landmarks utilized by early emigrants from Franklin County to the west.

large groups like those of Colonel John Donelson and James Robertson moving out to colonize a large area of Judge Richard Henderson's Transylvania Tract. Some ministers, too, are said to have migrated, accompanied by their congregations. The Reverend Randolph Hall of the Pigg River Primitive Baptist Church, went to Washington County, North Carolina, about 1796. It is not known if any of the congregation went with him.

Large numbers of veterans of the French and Indian War and the Revolution went south into Georgia, lured by the prospect of bounty land. The Georgia Indian lands were by lottery in 1805, 1806, 1818, 1820 and 1827. Military districts were also set up south of Green River in Kentucky and in two separate areas in Ohio. One area, along the Ohio River, went north through the middle of the state. The other, in northeast Ohio from Marietta north, adjoined the seven ranges of townships surveyed in 1785 (the first mathematical division of land).

The names of landowners in Franklin County, who sold out after migrating, are to be found in the deed books. Benjamin Cook, of Craven County, South Carolina, gave power of attorney to his son, Benjamin, in 1778 to sell his Snow Creek land. John and Martha Smith, of Guilford County, North Carolina (1779) and Joseph Cook, Guilford County, North Carolina (1782), sold their land as did John Murphy, Washington County, North Carolina, in 1781. It should be noted that the above-mentioned Washington County, North Carolina, was the state of Tennessee after 1796. The present Washington County, North Carolina, was formed in 1779 and lies on the south side of the Albemarle Sound.

Migration to Georgia and the Carolinas began in increasing numbers after Franklin County was formed in 1786. Neighboring families on the south branches of eastern Blackwater: the Heard brothers — Stephen, George, Jesse, and William — went to Wilkes County, Georgia; as did Peter and Susannah Gillum; Joseph Underwood; James Cowden; Jesse and Miriam Clay; Parmenas and George Haynes and Daniel and Fanny Richardson from Snow Creek; John Starkey from Gills Creek and George Griffith from Little Creek. All were in Wilkes County, Georgia, when their land was sold between 1791 and 1793. Scattered landowners living in North Carolina and a few in South Carolina sold out from these states before 1800.

In the years between 1786 and 1800, a great many men were selling out in Franklin County before migrating. We have no way of knowing their destinations without help from their descendants, neither are we able to identify those without land who went looking for homesteads or adventure.

Tales told by traders, long hunters, surveyors, speculators, and their agents drew a great many men as well as veterans seeking bounty lands. Letters from kinsmen and neighbors extolling the beauty and fertility of the area to which they had moved lured many. Daniel Boone's description of Kentucky, published by Filson, lent enchantment.

William Cook, of the Hatchett Run of western Pigg River, his wife, Margaret, and their twelve children and families went to Kentucky about 1780. They had married into the Bohannon, Samuel Miles, John and Mary Jones, William Dunn and John Murphy families in Franklin County and into the Mastin, Wilcoxin, Edrington and, Crutcher families in Kentucky.

Jesse and Hosea Cook, Lewis Mastin, and Walter Dunn settled in Innes Bottom between the forks of the Elkhorn River, a southern branch of the Kentucky River, about 1780. Colonel Hugh Innes, of Franklin County, had an overseer and several slaves there building a plantation. It was an area that had hitherto been free of Indian attacks. The Indians came without warning, killing Jesse Cook, Lewis Mastin, and one of the Innes slaves before mortally wounding Hosea who was able to get to his cabin. His wife and sister-in-law pulled him inside and barri-

caded the door. These courageous women killed one Indian and put out the fires the Indians had started, using everything at hand. Discouraged, the Indians finally left. William Dunn and his two sons escaped into the woods; however, the sons were later killed. Lewis Mastin's only child was scooped up by a neighbor on horseback but was later killed. This tale, told by the Reverend Abraham Cook as an old man, is to be found in Collin's *History of Kentucky*.

Probably the most dramatic journey was that of Colonel John Donelson's flotilla of some thirty vessels, mostly flatboats, that left Fort Patrick Henry on the Holston and moved down it to the Tennessee through a whirlpool and miles of shoals (Muscle Shoals) to the Ohio River and up it against the current to the Cumberland River and along it to French Lick (Nashville, Tennessee). Colonel Donelson was not a resident of Franklin County, but he owned and operated the bloomery somewhere in the southern part of Rocky Mount. He sold out to Jeremiah Early and James Callaway, Sr., in June 1779. Donelson and his party began the voyage on December 22, 1779. They went three miles in bitter cold on an ice-filled river and were forced to wait until the middle of February to resume the voyage. The party consisted of the families and slaves of the men who went overland through the Cumberland Gap to begin colonization of Judge Richard Henderson's Transylvania Tract. The route they took was the one that Daniel Boone had laid out in 1775 at the request of Judge Henderson. This route led through the Cumberland Gap and along the Wilderness Road to where a branch led to French Lick.

The journey was beset by damaged and sunken vessels. Hostile Chicamauga Indians lined the banks and attacked as the flotilla drifted by. The last boat had smallpox on board and was kept some distance from the others. It was attacked and all were either killed or made captives. A baby was born and lost overboad in an accident. Food supplies ran out and the party subsisted on what game and edible vegetation could be found. Snug cabins and plentiful food awaited them at the end of this journey on May 31, 1780.

Mark Dent, his wife, Elizabeth, a daughter of William Ferguson of Nicholas Creek, and two of their children traveled alone to Missouri (1811-1812) by way of the Cumberland Gap. Mark walked and led the packhorse, Elizabeth rode the other horse carrying the baby, Nancy, in her arms. Five-year old Joab rode behind his mother. Three-year-old Lewis had to be left behind with kinsmen, there being no place for him to ride. He finally reached Missouri. Dent County, Missouri is named for him.

Elder Jacob Miller and nine of his twelve children and their families went to western Ohio in 1800. The route taken is not known. It is known that they rested at Maysville, Kentucky, on the Ohio River and from there went to the land office at the site of Cincinnati and from there up the Great Miami River to the Dayton area. Sons Daniel and Abraham, and their families; their sister Anna Lybrook, widow of Phillip; and sister-in-law Phoebe McClure Miller, widow of Potter John Miller, went to Union County, Indiana, in 1810. Related families of Huston, Moyer, and Ritter accompanied them. Elder Miller preached to the Indians there and was honored by them.

He established Brethren churches in Indiana as well as Ohio. His son Tobias and wife, Sarah Henderson Miller, sold her inherited slaves in Virginia and joined the family in Indiana in 1810. Isaac joined the Ohio militia and was killed during the War of 1812. Son Samuel died in Virginia, Jacob died in Giles County, Virginia, in 1801; and daughter Mary, wife of Samuel Darst, lived on Story Creek in Franklin County. Other family connections, the Gingrich (Kingery), Toney, and Moss families, joined their Ohio and Indiana kin.

Some of William Toney's sons began moving into what became West Virginia quite early. William and Robert had "sang" (ginseng) camps on the waters of the Guyandotte River. John was on East River. Mitchell Clay moved from Blackwater to Clover Bottom on the Bluestone River before 1785. It was there that an Indian raid killed several of his children and took one son captive, later burning him at the stake. Jeremiah Shrewsberry was in Kanawha County in 1815; William and Sanford Scott also arrived about 1840. Ira Hurt owned an interest in the saltworks later lost to him when West Virginia became a state. Booker T. Washington, his stepfather, mother, and siblings went to Malden. The Bells, Oxleys, and Goodes went to Kanawha after 1850 as did the Sigmons and Brumleys in 1880. Many families moved to West Virginia after the Civil War to work in the coal mines, saltworks and lumber camps.

Waid's Stagecoach Stop - This stagecoach stop on The Carolina Road (foreground) at the Pigg River ford was operated by John Ferguson and subsequently by his widow (Elizabeth) in the 1790s and by his grandson Robert Waid in 1820. The community later became known as Waidsboro along the Carolina Road.

Berrien Springs, Michigan, drew William C. Webster as well as David and Luke Webster and their families before 1838. Eva Toney Thompson and her sons Squire and William moved to Niles, Michigan, in 1819. Her son William and three of his sons were in the California gold rush in 1846.

Five of the sons of Meshack Perdue, all veterans of the War of 1812, moved to the Drake Creek area of Sumner County, Tennessee (1814-1815). They were Eli, Asa, Matthew, Luke, and Daniel Perdue. Samuel Cockran, his wife, Sarah; son-in-law John Mattox and wife, Polly; son-in-law Isham Hodges and wife, Sally; and William Hale Perdue, son of Daniel and Happy Ward Perdue, accompanied them. They were joined by Lee and Squire Perdue whose family connection is unknown.

The most detailed account of a route followed other than Colonel Donelson's and John Robin Webster's to and from Berrien County, Michigan, was written in 1901 by Joseph Hampton Green. The interrelated families of Pollard, Greer, Overfelt, Beard, Webb, and Charlton and their slaves, some one hundred persons in all, went to Missouri. They left Franklin County on 11 September 1838 by way of Daniel's Run Gap and followed that road to New River where they crossed to Ingles Ferry to pick up Mrs. Charlton. From there they went to Smithville, Wytheville, Abingdon, and Newbern to Bean's Station after crossing the North Fork of the Holston, thence to Arlington and Greasy Cove, Tennessee. From there they went north to Hopkinsville, Kentucky, crossing the Ohio River at Barkers Ferry, passing from there through Equality and Alton, Illinois, where they crossed the Mississippi. They arrived at the Lee Willis farm on the edge of the Grand Prairie (Monroe County, Missouri) on 31 October 1838. That late in the fall, the creeks were full of leaves and great difficulty was experienced in finding clean drinking water.

We should give credit to the Indians for pointing the way and rage with them at the loss of their beautiful land and weep with them. □

GERTRUDE CASLER MANN, *a native of Michigan and a resident of Franklin County for thirty years, is recognized as the preeminent local historian of Franklin County. She is one of the founding members of the Franklin County Historical Society and a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission. Mrs. Mann has pursed an aggressive research of local history and genealogy for many years with an untiring dedication toward preserving the history of her adopted Franklin County.*

Communities and Villages of Franklin County

Virginia Greer Williams

The history of the villages and communities of Franklin County is a history of the roads of the county. As new roads were opened, settlements grew along them, particularly around the crossroads. As new, more convenient routes were chosen, the inhabitants of these villages and settlements often moved along them, leaving only a name that it is hoped was remembered and often was not.

The term *ghost town* is generally associated with the West — towns that had depended on mines whose ores were played out. Franklin County has its ghost towns, too — Germantown, Wisenburg, and Lawrencetown.

Stephen Peters and Daniel Layman built Germantown in 1793 on land now owned by Cline Boone and others. Lots were sold over the next seventy-five years. Germantown lay close to the intersection of the Lynchburg Road and that portion of the road that leads southwest from Hardy's Ford. The road from Bonbrook to Blackwater River at Nathaniel Clayborne's was also referred to as Early's Road at the time Germantown was established. The Lynchburg Road was referred to as the Main Road and the Wagon Road. Germantown had a school, stores (Asa and Smithson Holland and Pratt and Preston), a tavern, and a distillery owned by William Curtin and operated by Duval Crowell. The court order books have numerous entries similar to this March 1824 entry:

> The said Grand Jury also presented George Riddle of Botetourt County and Benjamin Wilkes of this county for unlawful gaming by playing at cards in the public road at Germantown before the door of William Chitwood's Tavern.

Wisenburg was chartered in 1793 on Moses Greer's land. The tax records reveal that in 1793 Moses Greer owned 1,459 acres of land, which lay on Blackwater River and Little Creek in the Gogginsville area. A road order in 1796 states:

> Theodorick Webb, Fitz Garrald, Samuel Hairston, William Akers, Josiah Woods & David Barton . . . View the nearest & best way for a Road from Wysenburg to pass by Triggs Iron Works to the Henry line leading to John Barksdales on Smiths River & make report thereof to Court. [Court Order Book 3, p. 205.]

Captain Greer apparently never sold a single lot, so no known record exists that could pinpoint Wisenburg's location.

Lawrencetown was developed in 1818 by Edwin Price and the lots were sold at public auction. Over forty lots were sold for prices ranging from $150 to over $200. Lots were purchased by the Callaways, Divers, Earlys, Thurmans, Dillons, Leftwiches, Saunderses, Hancocks, Booths, Fergusons, Cundiffs, and Hollands. Located just north of Merriman Run on the Staunton River, the town is now underwater.

Hale's Ford was the most important crossing on the Staunton River in Franklin County. It was named for Nicholas Haile, Jr., who was in the Staunton River area when Bedford was formed in 1752; the original Hale's Ford was further north than the present Hale's Ford. The post office, originally called Booth's Store, was established in 1823. When a covered bridge was built to span the Staunton River, the name was not changed to Hale's Bridge, but rather to Hale's Ford Bridge. The road from Hale's Ford through Burnt Chimney is known to have been a part of the Warwick Road, and the names of many of the early settlers are recalled — Duncans, John Hook, Booths, Burroughs, Burwells, Fergusons, and Taylors.

A late 1940s map entitled "Brown's Map of Rocky Mount Turnpike — New London to Rocky Mount" shows that the road crossed the Staunton River at Radford's Ford (between Lawrencetown and Greer's Ford), continued southwesterly past "Mrs. Cabell's" thence to Brooks Mill, past the "Sign Rock," the Perdues, the Cheetwodes (Chitwoods), and crossed Powder Mill Creek on in to Rocky Mount.

The sign rock appears to have been in the Redwood vicinity, which was the location of White Rock Railroad Depot on the F&P Railroad. Redwood Post Office was originally named Guilzot. The Harvey Road in the Redwood area was named for Robert Harvey, of Botetourt County, whose "southeast seat forge" was on Pigg River (Kegley in his *Virginia Frontier* referred to him as a "distinguished iron man").

The F&P roughly followed present Route 40 east of Rocky Mount, passing through Redwood, Glade Hill, Union Hall, Novelty and Penhook.

Mr. John Henry Davidson who died in 1960 at the age of ninety-six said that a spur line railroad with wooden rails once was operated; it came to the top of the hill above where the village of Penhook is now. He said that the "pinhookers" (independent buyers of tobacco for speculation) came by rail. People rolled tobacco in on hogsheads. The pinhookers bought the tobacco, and many farmer said they had been "hooked." That supposedly is how the term *pinhook* originated. When a post office was established in 1854, Edward C. Murphy, the first postmaster, used Penhook as the name of the new post office.

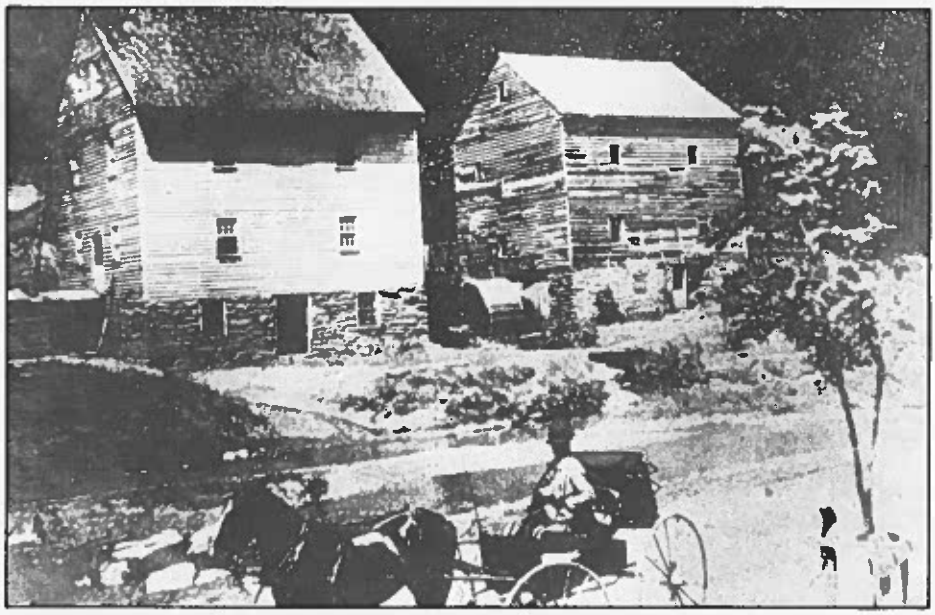
Glade Hill Post Office was established in 1836, with John S. Brown as its first postmaster. Brown built a tobacco factory at Old Glade Hill, which is about two miles south of present Glade Hill on Route 718.

An ordinary and store were operated at Dickinson's — first as Dickinson and Shrewsburg's, then as Dickinson and Pratt's, and finally, Dickinson's. Located on the old Danville-Floyd Turnpike, it was owned first by Josiah Dickinson and later his son Pleasant. Dickinson's Counting Room was the site for taking depositions in the Clement divorce case and the spot where the three Clement brothers were killed: Ralph, James, and William.

Only two hundred or three hundred yards away is the Captain William A. Brown home (owned by the Law family for many years and now owned by Kay and Jimmy Potter) and his tobacco factory where Brown's Log Cabin was manufactured. Toward Pigg River at Haynes Ford (earlier the property of Robert Boulton), the road passed through Progress to Woodpecker Level. In 1767 this portion of Franklin County was in Pittsylvania County and Camden Parish; in the minutes of the meeting of the vestry of Camden Parish appears the following:

> Lewis Morgan (who lived on Chestnut Mountain by 1755) is ordered to read at the Chappell at Snow Creek (this is now old Chapel Primitive Baptist Church) and at Potters Creek and at the home of William Heard.
> At the Court held for February, 1798 the gentlemen justices Ordered that Richard Comer, Levi Shocklee, Robert Boulton, Moses Potter & Elisha Keen or any three of them, after being first sworn, do view the nearest & best way from the Wood Pecker Level Crossing Pigg River into the Road leading to Anthonys Ford on Stanton & Make report thereof to Court.

Woodpecker Level Post Office was established in 1826 at Brown and Woodson's Store and Tarleton Brown was its first



Jacob Boon, first cousin of Daniel Boone, established this mill at present Boones Mill in 1784. The site is now occupied by Ruff's Antique Shop but Boon's house still stands across "Maggotty" Creek just opposite the old mill site.

postmaster. The post office was renamed Rivermont in 1894, with Nannie Haynes as postmaster.

The area between LaPrades Mill toward Turkeycock Mountain has for many years been referred to as Sago. White's Mill, originally Ziegler's Mill, which was established by Jacob Ziegler, was located in the area as well as LaPrades Mill.

In 1786 Joshua Brock sold Ashford Napier 140 acres on Maple Branch (this flows from behind Adams's Store through the old Henry Walker place) near the Buffalo Wallow. [Deed Book 1, p. 99.]

Snow Creek had received its name by 1741, entries for land having been made by David, William, and Thomas Caldwell, Will Rogers, and Adam McCaule (McCall). The Snow Creek Post Office with Gabriel Mackenheimer as its first postmaster was established in 1832. The Young family, beginning with William, were early settlers, as were the Cooks. Both these families still have lineal male descendants living in the neighborhood. Benjamin Cook served on Franklin County's first grand jury, and on April 6, 1789, the justices recommended him to the governor as "a proper person to serve as a justice in the Commission of the Peace for this County."

In Court Order Book 3, p. 275 appears the following:

> Ordered that Benjamin Cook, Elisha Estes, James Prunty & Jesse Estes or any three of them being first Sworn do View a Way for a Road to Turn out of the Road leading from the ford of Turkey Cock Creek at the Widow Esteses then Crossing Chestnut Mountain at the Indian Graves and thence into the Road leading from William Jamisons to ford of Chestnut Creek & report their opinions there to Court.

This would appear to be the Old Tyree Road, which passed the mica mines and Samuel Patterson's (Patterson died in 1797, owning more than 7,000 acres between Doe Run and the top of Chestnut Mountain) on to William Jamison's home at Shady Grove, close to the Henry County line.

The home of John Woods and his three sons, Robert (Franklin County's first sheriff), Wiley, and Samuel, was just south of Sydnorsville. The post office at Sydnorsville was established in 1832, with Beverly Sydnor as its first postmaster.

The villages of Sontag and Patti are remembered primarily for the romance behind their naming. About 1852 before John Henry Greer went to medical school in Philadelphia, he became an actor on the New York stage. It was during that period that he became acquainted with a number of actors and performers. The two most famous opera singers at that time were Henriette Sontag and Adelina Patti, and later on Dr. Greer designated the two post offices in Franklin County as Sontag and Patti in their honor.

Henriette Sontag was born in Germany in 1806 and died of cholera in Mexico City in 1854. She spent most of her career singing in the opera houses of Europe and made her debut at the age of fifteen in Prague. In 1822 she appeared in German and Italian roles at the Vienna Opera. It wasn't until 1852 that she came to the United States and made a triumphal tour. She is still remembered in New York as one of the greatest opera singers of all time.

The most celebrated soprano of the nineteenth century except for Jenny Lind was Adelina Patti, who was born in Madrid, Spain, in 1843. She came to America as a small child and began her singing career in New York at the age of seven.

Before the Metropolitan Opera House was built in 1883, the Academy of Music in New York was the city's finest opera house. Adelina Patti was the leading bel canto at the academy and later on was a great star at the Metropolitan.

The village of Henry lay close to the Carolina Road, the Morgan Bryan Road (named for Daniel Boone's father-in-law), and the Henry County line. By 1743 William Buttram had a settlement at the mouth of Buttram's Town Creek — now Town Creek. Near there was Thomas Ruble's iron furnace. Robert Hairston, one of the first justices of the Franklin County Court lived nearby, as did the Goodes, Youngs, and Prillamans.

In 1748 Robert Pusey, who made his home near Endicott was granted

> 400 acres on both sides of Irvin, now Smith River, begin: at a Great Poplar that was fell'd for a Bear about 1 mile above the mouth of Rennet Bag Cr. running up and down.

Pusey stated to the General Assembly in 1775 that in 1758 he and his wife and child had been captured by the Shawnee, carried into captivity, and held for a long time until he had redeemed their liberty.

Rentfro's Ridge, close to Endicott, was the home of William Rentfro. Tradition tells us that two of his sons set out hunting bear, each wrapped in a bearskin. They went in opposite directions but in the densely wooded area one brother accidentally mistook the other. He shot and killed his brother, whose unmarked grave is on the Vernon Spencer property on Route 40.

Will Mavity was a surveyor who lived in the Turner's Creek-Nicholas Creek area, as did Robert Mavity and the Joneses, Thomas, John, David, and Robert. Also situated in this area was William Griffith whom the Justices summoned "to answer the Information of the Deputy States Attorney for Twice Voating at the last Election." [Court Order Book 1, Page 341.]

In December, 1791 William Ferguson was granted leave by the court to build a water grist mill on Nicholas Creek. [Court Order Book 2, Page 168.]

The village of Ferrum lies close to Cook's Knob and Saul's Knob. Ferrum was originally named Sophronia, and when the railroad, called locally the Punkin Vine came through in 1889 it was named Ferrum for the iron ore deposits in the area.

Carron Furnace on Story Creek was owned and operated by Swinfield Hill, Walter Bernard, and William Armstrong of Hill

and Company. The iron was smelted at Carron Furnace and transported to the Hill and Company forge on Blackwater River (now the property of Bill and Suzanne Ross) to be converted into bars or commodities such as horseshoes, nails, and cooking implements.

Swinfield Hill was one of the justices of the first Franklin County Court. He was the son of Robert Hill who settled on Pigg River in the 1740s and whose blockhouse stood until it burned in a brush fire some twenty-five years ago. Robert Hill had five sons —two said to have been killed by Indians and one by a horse, Swinfield and Thomas reached maturity and left descendants. Robert Hill's grave is in Tanyard Cemetery at the foot of Bald Knob. The date of his death is marked 1778.

The Saunders family owned a furnace and forge on Pigg River and bought Washington Iron Works from the heirs of Callaway and Early by 1822. Carron Furnace on Story Creek had been bought by Callaway from Hill and Company in 1801, and this was sold to the Saunderses in 1822, also.

Peter Saunders, one of the first justices of Franklin County, settled on Runnet Bag Creek. He had served as a delegate from Henry County in 1781 with Patrick Henry and was on Henry County's first court. His son Fleming lived at Bleak Hill, and his daughter Theodosia married John Hale who built Liberty Hall on Gills Creek in 1800.

Another forge was located on Blackwater River, Elk Forge, operated by Robert Harvey who sold it to his son-in-law, Stephen Trigg. Trigg sold the forge to John Miller in 1798. Traces of the forge have been found close to Andrew ("Jiggs") Sink's, near Deyerle's Knob and Graveyard Knob.

Nearby is the community of Dugwell, close to the Carolina Road. Local tradition relates that this settlement was originally chosen to be the county seat, but the dug well produced no water, and another location, Rocky Mount, was chosen. Old court papers were supposedly stored in an old Callaway house in the area, which lent great credence to this story. Between Dugwell and Retreat two young men, brothers and deserters from the Confederate army, were executed by a firing squad in the yard of Charity Chapel after having threatened to burn the then new Hickman's Mill.

The Retreat area of Franklin County was settled by Joseph Rentfro. In Bedford County Will Book 1, at page 244 is his will in which he left to son Mark "on the north side of this land on Blackwater which I now live on . . . to son Joshua . . . south side . . . crossing the South fork of Blackwater through the wild meadow." Another of Joseph Rentfro's sons was William, whose son was shot accidentally, as discussed earlier.

Maud Carter Clement's *History of Pittsylvania County* recounts the Moravians' passage through Franklin County:

> They record: "Near by Magotty Creek dwells Benjamin Ray, an old man of some ninety years, and his wife, who is about a hundred years old. They are both active and cheerful people who gave us milk to drink and were very kind." Close by the house they came upon the "Werrick Road which runs mostly westward and is a pretty good road." Over this road the back settlers conveyed their tobacco, and probably other produce, to market, at Warwick on the James.
>
> The following day the brethren came to Mr. Robert Cole's place, a justice of the peace (Lunenburg) from whom they bought some corn; and a little further on they crossed Blackwater, "a large creek with steep banks," and missing the way came to an old mill race at Rentfro's Mill.

Jacob Boon moved into the area in 1782 and built his mill on Maggodee Creek. It was at Boones Mill that the Carolina Road split, one spur going through Maggodee Gap, and the other going northward toward Hardy's Ford.

Dr. Wingfield in his *History* list 117 post offices that were established in Franklin County. Only ten of those named still exist. Many were short-lived; for instance, Bruce was established February 26, 1889, and was discontinued less than a year later on February 8, 1890.

Whether our forebears resided in Alean, Bull Run, Calico Rock, Dubuque, Edwardsville, Fisherborough, Hernando, Junta, Lobelia, Manila, Neva, Oneida, Pyramid, Rosevale, Stanopher, Taccio, Ula, Villa, Wyatt, or Young's Store they all, as Peter Saunders stated in his 1793 letter to Governor Henry Lee, "resided in Franklin County." □

VIRGINIA LEE GREER WILLIAMS, *daughter of Goldie Shaw Greer and the late Moses Theodrick Greer and great-great-great grandaughter of Captain Moses Greer, lives in Franklin County, Virginia, and Moore County, North Carolina. She is a charter member of the Franklin County Historical Society and an active researcher of local and genealogical history.*

The village of Callaway was named for the Callaway family. James Callaway, Sr. left large plantations to his sons Henry T. and James, Jr. at his death in 1809. This picture of the area in the early twentieth century shows the Martin Woolen Mill at right with the home of his daughter Loulia Barnhart behind; to the left, an old shop in the foreground; Robert Martin's home in the center; the Barnhart Store behind with the Jim Martin house behind the store. Another store is in the distance right center.

The Churches Come To Franklin County

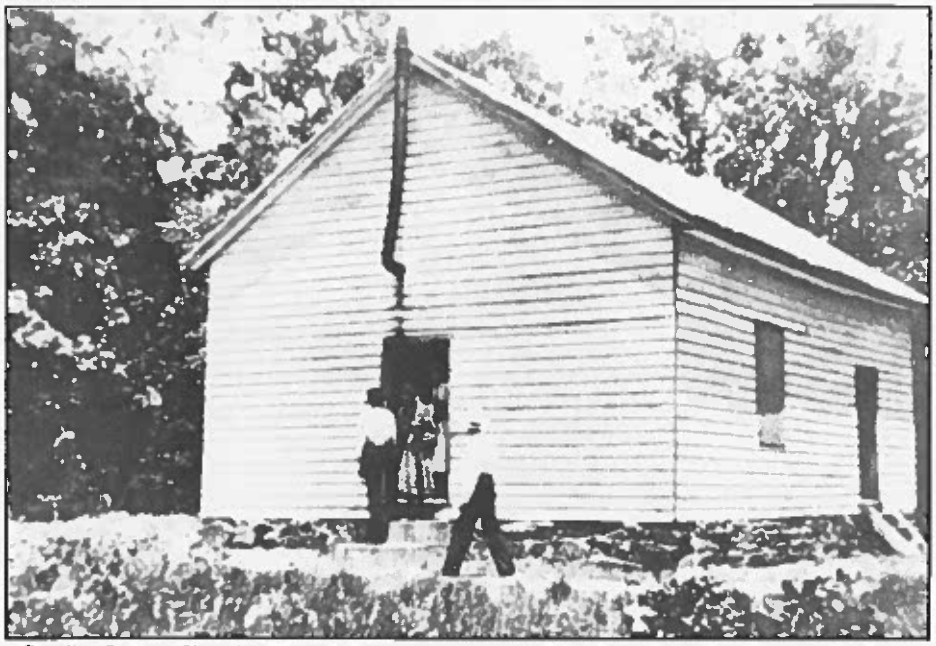
Rev. Alpheus W. Potts, D.D.

Migration in early America took its toll on the "moral and religious restraints" to which people "had been accustomed in their former homes." With each new migration a little more was lost. The outward constraints of former family and community mores were gone. The fight against the frontier - getting land, building in the forest, clearing land for planting and making a living - was a battle for one's own family. This bred innumerable conflicts and stirred envies, hatreds, and all manner of uncharitableness.

Our early church leaders were concerned for the souls of their migrant people. Preachers were recruited and sent out as circuit riders to win souls, create classes for spiritual development, and claim a nation for Christ.

People from eastern Virginia came west. Some from Chesterfield, Amelia and points east stopped in Bedford and Charlotte, later moving to Franklin. Anglo Saxons and Germans moved from Pennsylvania along the Valley of Virginia to Franklin. The story of the Reverend William Hill, of Cumberland County, is a case in point. A product of the Revival of 1787, he was a recruit for the Presbyterian ministry. In 1790 he was sent on a missionary tour by the Hanover Presbytery. He went to Franklin County, arriving at the courthouse on election day. He owned land there and had personal business. He states that there "was much wickedness" and "my poor fellow mortals (were) drinking and degrading themselves...cursing, swearing, drinking and fighting and worse." One who was soliciting votes "had been an Episcopal clergyman before the Revolution." Mr. Hill told further of visiting nearby an aunt and her husband - both members of a Baptist church - and was "much grieved to see how the Lord's day was desecrated and profaned by the family." When he remonstrated with them his aunt supported him but his uncle responded, "the Baptist did not acknowledge the obligation of the Sabbath day."

Thus we learn the Baptists and Anglicans (later Episcopalians) were in Franklin prior to 1790. The Anglicans were the established church. Parishes had been created and supported by taxes. Clergy had been installed, homes (glebes) furnished, and chapels provided. Generally, the clergy, more responsible to London than to vestrymen, became lax. Methodist Societies within the church seeking deeper spiritual experience were unable to change this. The



Carolina Springs Church - although the present structure dates from a later time the name has been retained by this small Black church. It was here in 1769 that a "Chappell of Ease" was ordered to be built near the springs at the crossing of the Carolina and Chiswell roads.

Revolution set in - people related to English institutions were Tories and suspect. Later as things became American, glebes were sold and Episcopal houses of worship were used by others.

Baptist churches and their organization suited freedom-seeking frontier people. Independent congregations had no tightly knit connections. Pigg River Church was established in 1773 by Nathan Hall and Town Creek Church in 1775. Even the Baptist Association broke up in 1823. Some felt no compulsion to share the gospel in a missionary spirit. Then there were Missionary Baptists and Primitive (sometimes called Hardshell) Baptists. (For further reading, see the booklet *Town Creek Primitive Baptist Church* by Mrs. Frank D. Thornton.)

The Scots people from the Valley of Virginia were Presbyterians. These were the concern of the Reverend William Hill and his Presbytery. He found his kin were now Baptist. Then he found a hospitable host, Captain Robert Wood, and there he met another Presbyterian missionary from Lexington sent out by the Synod. Hill and Lyle held a meeting "of short duration" as the Synod instructed in order to complete their tour. The meeting was held by the woods at John Martin's near Chestnut Mountain. (Probably this was the beginning of Presbyterian Chestnut Chapel.) These preachers had to go on to Abingdon. On their way in Franklin they found homes to preach in: "at Mr. John Dickenson's on Pigg River, at Iron Creek, at Mr. Turner's on Fawn Creek, at the Meeting House near Captain Hairston's the funeral sermon of Captain Hairston, at Mr. Pilion's on Smith River, at the head of Smith's; at Major Easton's, at Captain Johnson's."

The Methodist Circuit Riders pushed into Franklin (they had a large circuit in Pittsylvania in 1776) by sending two preachers in 1791. There were already 287 white members and 27 black members in the assigned area. On July 23, 1791, a quarterly meeting was held at Rocky Mount at the courthouse. On Saturday the ministers preached several sermons. On Sunday a "Love Feast" for personal testimonies was followed by "the Sacrament" (communion). Many people attended.

A camp meeting, generally sponsored by Methodists, Presbyterians and Baptist, was held at Chestnut Chapel in Franklin in 1804. Camp meetings had begun in 1799 on the border of east Tennessee and Kentucky. Lorenzo Dow, invited by Stith Mead, of Bedford, had a number of such meetings across the river near Moneta, and Methodism in Franklin was advanced as a result.

The Franklin Circuit was extensive (including Patrick County). In 1807 a Rocky Mount Circuit was created and at the end of

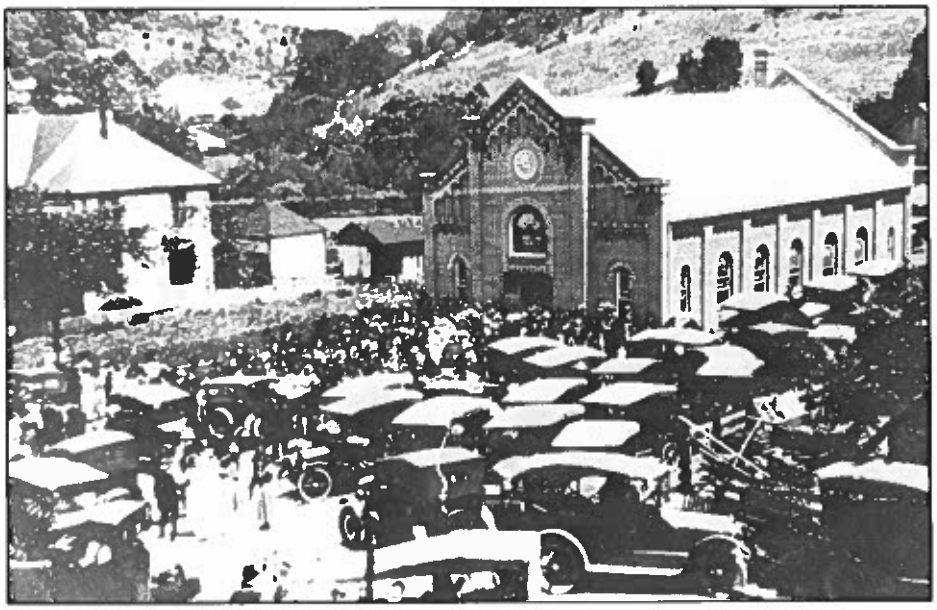
the year there were 164 whites and 14 blacks included in it. The Franklin Circuit grew also. Statistics do not tell us the number of churches. After eight years Rocky Mount merged into the Franklin Circuit. In 1814 there was a general falling off in membership.

In 1869 (the date of the earliest statistics) there was a Franklin - Flint Hill Circuit with eight churches and 216 members and a South Staunton Circuit with seven churches and 380 members. The preacher on Henry Circuit lived in Franklin at Shady Grove. He probably had a church in Franklin.

The Christian church (Disciples of Christ) was an outgrowth of the camp meetings near Cane Ridge, Kentucky, about 1801. Their leaders emphasized evangelism, resisted denominationalism, and created a body to be a home for all Christians. Creating another church was not their purpose but it was their result. Snow Creek Christian Church's congregation came into existence earlier but the church itself was built about 1866. The Disciples of Christ's growth in Franklin has not been as large as some.

The Anglican church, through its Camden Parish (in Pittsylvania), included territory in Franklin south of Blackwater. This church built what came to be known as Olde Chappelle in the Snow Creek area in 1769. After the Revolution and a decimation of membership the Protestant Episcopal church became the new organization (1789). Glebes (homes of the clergy) were sold and church buildings taken over by others. Olde Chappelle became a Primitive Baptist church. In 1845 the six or eight remaining members (now Episcopalians) began to meet in Rocky Mount. A church was built in 1874.

The story of the Church of the Brethren is adequately told by Dr. Frank Hurt in *The History of the German Pioneers*. These dedicated people came to Franklin about 1775. After some years of meeting in homes, Germantown Church was built. The members colonized in after years and formed other churches. Their pietistic heritage had been firmly held. Their faith, pattern of life, and dress characterize them. Their successful farming practices have set an example and Franklin County's economy is the richer for their migration.



A large crowd attended the dedication of the Boones Mill Christian Church in June 1920.

In recent years people of Pentecostal fervor have come into Franklin and grown in numbers among us. They worship under different denominational names but emphasize holiness of life and practice evangelical pursuits. They are earnest and active.

Out of the religious zeal of the different denominations the county is well populated today with churches and though most clergymen have several churches the Word is preached regularly, the lost are sought, and the faithful are served. The concerns of the church fathers in councils, conferences, and associations and of the few dedicated Bible-loving frontier parents have been rewarded with a rich, accumulated religious heritage and many viable churches enriching Franklin County life. □

REVEREND ALPHEUS W. POTTS, A.B., M.Div., D.D., *a United Methodist pastor for forty-six years, served pastorates in Virginia, including Bassett and Roanoke, where he now resides in retirement. He is a past president of the United Methodist Virginia Conference Historical Society and a grandson of Reverend Joseph E. Potts, pastor of the Franklin Circuit, 1863-1866.*

Original prerevolutionary Anglican church on Snow Creek of 1769. In 1789 it was occupied by the baptist and known as Old Chapel. Until recently it retained its original specifications as ordered in 1769: 24x32 feet, 2 doors, 5 windows and roof 12 feet in pitch.

General Jubal A. Early

Major Terry Moss

The American Civil War produced several central characters identifiable with all the drama, comedy, sacrifice, and tragedy of a Shakespearean play. One of these figures proved to be perhaps the conflict's most perplexing personality — a man destined during the course of the war to ascend to the highest levels of commendation and to plummet to the lowest depths of condemnation.

Scion of an old, established Franklin County family, Joab Early owned a sizable thriving plantation in the county's Red Valley section some eighteen miles north of Rocky Mount. As a genteel, southern planter of local prominence, he considered education paramount to his children's development. Subsequently, Joab ensured that his large brood benefited from his capacity to afford education and his desire for them to learn.

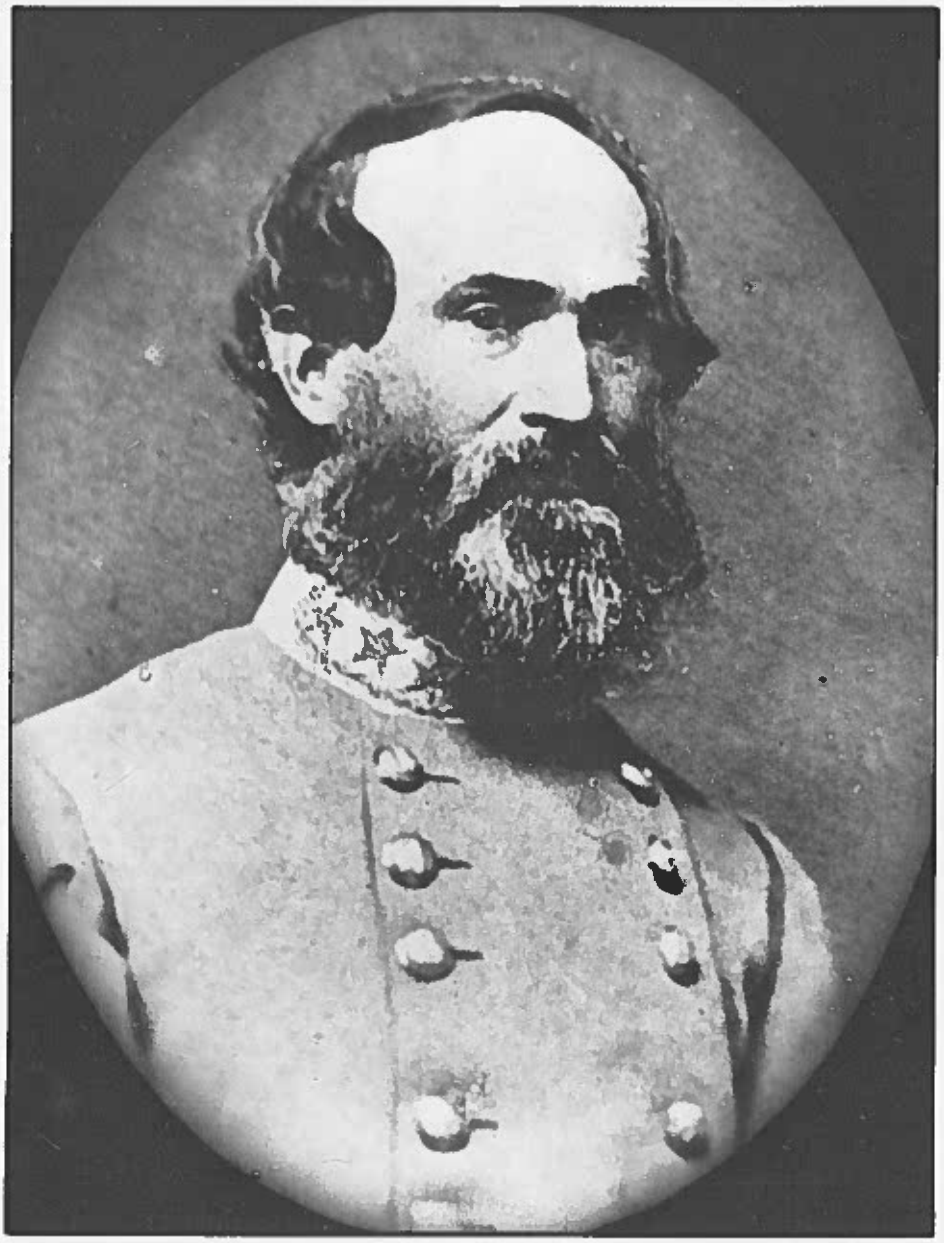
His second son, Jubal Anderson ("Jube") Early, entered this world on 3 November 1816. He subsequently received instruction in some of the best schools in southwestern Virginia. Securing a congressional appointment to West Point in 1833, Jube embarked on an educational journey designed to take him beyond regional influences. He proved to be a good academic student, but had difficulties adjusting to the academy's rigid disciplinary standards. Graduating eighteenth in a class of fifty, Jube came close each of his last three years to being dismissed for too many demerits. After graduation and commissioning as a lieutenant of artillery, Jube saw action against the Seminole Indians in Florida. However, within a year he resigned his commission to study law with N. M. Taliaferro, a prominent attorney in Franklin County. Jube obtained his license in 1840 and immediately began practicing in his home county.

His wit, honesty, skill, and family connections won him a seat in the Virginia legislature in 1841. Unfortunately, as a Whig, Jube lost his seat the next year in the general election that swept the Democrats into power. Undaunted, Jube secured an appointment as the county's prosecuting attorney and held that position for a decade. Service as the only major in the Virginia Volunteer Regiment during the Mexican War interrupted his tenure for one year.

His handling of controversial cases, court style, intelligence, and knowledge of the law quickly won him a reputation as the best lawyer in the region. This renown earned him a position in the Virginia Secession Convention in 1861. His staunch stance as a defender of the Union won him the reputation as "the Terrapin from Franklin County." However, once the vote called for secession, Jube joined the Confederate army.

Due to his background and volunteer rank, Jube went into service as a colonel and regimental commander. By war's end, he had risen to lieutenant general and commander of Robert E. Lee's most important independent army, a force destined to prolong the war for almost one year.

The brotherly conflict accentuated Jube's puzzling, even eccentric personality: cynical, witty, ambitious, self-reliant, practical, unbearably acidic, unquestionably loyal, aggressively bold. His physical appearance, except for the stoop caused by the rheumatism he contracted in the Mexican War, reflected his essence perfectly. Approximately six feet tall and in his late forties during the Civil War, Early had a rugged face and snapping black eyes that revealed the tenacity and audacity of a resolute battler. A nonconformist in an officer corps constituted principally of genteel, finely at-



Jubal A. Early (1816-1894), Franklin County's most famous soldier.

tired aristocrats struggling "to preserve their cavalier image," Old Jube dressed simply. His standard uniform consisted of a great gray coat; an ancient, white slouch hat adorned with a black plume; and the inevitable canteen. Constantly chewing tobacco, Early produced an impression of disarray within an ocean of gentility. However, this effect was not the only factor that caused friction between him and his fellow officers.

Possessed with explicit opinions, Early generally did not hesitate to express them in a brusque, cynical, or satirical manner, which usually offended superiors, peers, and subordinates alike. One acquaintance wrote he was "like a procupine's quills stick-[ing] out aggressively in all directions." This blunt nature, coupled with his refusal to placate civilian authorities politely, additionally identified him as an anomaly in the officer corps to which he belonged.

In spite of Early's acerbic personality, only a rare individual doubted his fighting abilities. Involved in every major action in which the Army of Northern Virginia dueled, from First Manassas to Petersburg, Early fought with an intensity rarely equaled by any other general on either side. At Second Manassas, Old Jube, instead of withdrawing after his regiments depleted their ammunition, inspired his soldiers to remain in position and hurl stones at the advancing Federals. Cited on numerous occasions by his superiors for tenacious bravery, Early earned the continual admiration of his subordinates. They would never honor him with devotion because of his caustic nature, but they would respect him for his aggressiveness and, more importantly, for his unequaled record of success. Perhaps his unrestrained hatred of Union soldiers ignited this capacity to fight. Whatever the reason, when the summer of 1864 arrived and brought with it Grant's final, grinding war of attrition, Robert E. Lee held few misgivings about his curt, tenacious "soldier's soldier." Lee knew full well that Early could manage the independent assignment Lee had designed to divert Federal troops and alleviate the desperate situation created by the Union siege at Petersburg.

Early's campaign ran a roller coaster in terms of success and failure. His brilliant raid on Washington and early tactical successes in the Shenandoah Valley necessitated a strong response from the Union troops at Petersburg. With the transfer of Northern troops from that siege to the Valley, Lee obtained the reaction for which he had gambled. Unfortunately, for Jube his command had to engage huge forces and eventually dwindled to a few soldiers who were subsequently wiped out near Waynesboro in March 1865.

If Jubal Early had fallen at Cold Harbor or at his successful raid on Washington, he would have been almost unanimously considered one of the greatest of the Confederate generals. Most observers believed him the only commander, following Stonewall's death, capable of leading the summer diversion. His Valley campaign is important in military annals because it is a sterling example of what a small, mobile unit, driven by determined, resourceful, and energetic leadership, can accomplish. As a game of bluff and ruse, the venture has few equals. Unfortunately for Old Jube, the ironic legacy of this successful gamble brought him disaster and not victory. Lincoln's administration, to continue its political, and thus military, war effort, had to extinguish the Southern benefits of Early's victories. In the end, Old Jube's brilliant moment in military history made no difference to the war's final outcome.

Here lived Joab and Ruth Early, parents of Jubal A. Early. It was here that Jubal was born in 1816 and resided before leaving for West Point. Tradition has it that the right side of the house was log bodied and the left was erected at a later date of frame construction at which time the entire structure was framed over.

Relieved of his command after Waynesboro, Early made his way back to Franklin County. Learning of Lee's surrender, Jube attempted to get to Texas and fight with General Kirby Smith. However, Smith surrendered and Jube, asserting that he could not live in the same nation as Yankees, fled to Mexico. He later went to Canada to join fellow Confederates in exile but, upon assurance of amnesty in 1869, Early returned to Lynchburg to practice law.

His return also signaled a new twist in Jube's life — his committment to redeem the Confederacy. In jest, Early once remarked that he had never seceded from the Union; Lincoln had dissolved it. He did not jest, however, about his justification for the South's secession nor his explanation of the Confederacy's defeat. He became the leading defender of the Lost Cause. His voluminous manuscripts, books, and correspondence eventually earned him the position as chief spokesman for the Southern Cause.

During the latter third of the nineteenth century Jube became a minor folk hero. An aura of legend surrounded his military career. He represented an initial thrust of southern resolve to climb out of the mire of Appomattox. Establishing the requirements necessary for the true chronicle of the Confederacy, Old Jube spent three decades seeking a justification for secession and an explanation of defeat. As a result, he gained power because he typified an exaggeration of the postwar southern mind and his personality dominated those of others. He became the most feared reviewer of Civil War historiography. Partisans often asked his advice for or sought his approval of their writings. In his role as a vindicator, Jube not only made history but preserved and described it.

On 2 March 1894, Old Jube died. In Richmond the Capitol's flag flew at half-mast. Thousands of mourners, many wearing faded gray attended his funeral in Lynchburg. United State Senator John Daniel read the funeral text entitled "A Prince in Israel Has Fallen." Literally faithful to the cause to his grave, Jube wore a gray suit and cuff links imprinted with Confederate flags. Gray cloth lined his coffin. Detachments from the Richmond Howitzers and the Virginia Military Institute fired salutes, a bugler sounded taps, and an honor guard laid "the very incarnation of [the Confederacy's] glorious memories to rest." The old warrior would order no more charges. □

MAJOR TERRY R. MOSS *is currently serving with the U.S. Army in Germany. He became interested in General Jubal Early while in graduate school at the University of North Carolina. His research continued while teaching history at the United States Military Academy at West Point. Major Moss is the author of a definitive biography of General Early yet to be published.*

Booker T. Washington

Rose Marie Finney and Eleanor C. Long

As if calling a native son home, an old farm bell rings over the Hales Ford countryside. On this late September day in 1908, the backwoods community responds to the bell's cry as blacks and whites gather to hear a speech by a now-famous son. He steps to the porch of the "big house" and looks to the people of Franklin County. Even as he speaks he thinks, with mixed feelings, of his youth here - a childhood filled with the beauty of this land, the wonder of nature, the confusing and harsh world of slavery. Booker T. Washington has come to the place of his birth - his first and what was destined to be his only visit since his departure as a nine year old in 1865.

Before his death in November of 1915, Booker T. Washington would gain national and international prominence as the leading spokesperson of his race. At age 25 he would start a school, Tuskegee Institute, where thousands of blacks throughout the country would be educated and where George Washington Carver's botanical genius would flourish. Tuskegee would gain the support of America's oldest society and America's oldest wealth and continue to provide a sound practical education beyond the centennial celebration of its founding. This man, born into slavery in Franklin County, was to advise three presidents of the United States, William McKinley, Theodore Roosevelt, and William Howard Taft. He would have tea at Windsor Castle with Queen Victoria of Great Britain. He would become the first black person to receive an honorary degree from Harvard University, the oldest and most renowned university in America.

On this day in 1908, on a speaking tour of the South, Booker T. Washington stopped to see again the land where he was born a slave. To the throng of about two hundred people who gathered to greet him, Dr. Washington said:

> My friends and neighbors of my early boyhood days; You can not realize what a great privilege I find in getting here today. It has been at least forty years since I left this place, and as far as I can recall and get hold of the facts, I left here with my mother almost immediately after the close of the Civil War. My mother, with the rest of the family, went to Malden, West Virginia in a section of the coal mining region, and very soon after going there I remember I began working in the coal mine. While working in the coal mines one day I heard two miners talking about a school, and I said I was going to find my way to that school. I found it was Hampton Institute and stayed there about five years getting some education, and then I said I was going still farther south, and in 1881, I left West Virginia and went into the state of Alabama. In beginning my little talk I want to emphasize the fact that during all the time I have been absent I have never forgotten this spot. I have never forgotten the impression made upon my life. I have never forgotten those who owned me as a slave boy here.

The Burroughs plantation home. Booker T. Washington was born a slave in the cabin immediately behind this "big house." The house burned some 30 years ago.

Hoping to better his lot in life, he hired on as a houseboy to Mrs. Viola Ruffner, wife of a mine owner. She, his mother, and General Samuel C. Armstrong, of Hampton Institute, would become lifelong influences on his character and beliefs. Mrs. Ruffner was a strict disciplinarian with demanding standards for a job well-done. It is no coincidence that Booker T. Washington had the same character traits as an adult.

Samuel Armstrong, principal of Hampton Institute, nurtured Washington's love for learning. He encouraged his scholastic excellence and participation on the debating team. Armstrong recommended Washington for the Tuskegee position. When Tuskegee Institue was a fledgling school, Armstrong and Hampton Institute loaned Washington money to buy land, buildings, textbooks, and equipment. Washington adopted Armstrong's missionary zeal for educating minorities. This attitude brought both praise and criticism from the leading citizens of the day.

When Booker T. Washington started Tuskegee Institute, he developed his school according to a plan similar to Hampton Institute's. Academics were taught, but the emphasis was placed on industrial trades and teacher training. Washington made many trips to the North to raise funds for the school from influential philanthropic whites; Samuel Armstrong provided the contacts and introductions. In 1895, well-known in the South for his school and his public speaking, Washington was invited to speak at the Atlanta Cotton States and International Exposition. Here was an opportunity for national exposure. That day, Washington made a compelling speech calling for blacks to "cast down your bucket where you are." The most famous passage in his speech was interpreted as support for the segregationist Jim Crow laws: "In all things that are purely social we can be as separate as the fingers, yet one as the hand in all things essential to mutual progress."

At once, Washington was embraced by white politicians as the emerging black spokes-

Booker T. Washington addressing the issues of his day. Always a popular speaker, he became the foremost spokesman for his race and a confidant of Presidents McKinley, Roosevelt and Taft.

man on racial issues. In the early 1900s, Washington consolidated his power into "The Tuskegee Machine," which sought to promote his viewpoint on black issues nationwide. He never publicly altered his views on segregation, though he frequently spoke of the need for blacks to gain civil rights through education and economic opportunity. Critics complained that he often "came down squarely on both sides of the issue." Behind the scenes, Washington funded court cases attacking "separate but equal" laws, always anonymously.

Booker T. Washington lived fifty-nine years. He married three times; his first wife, Fannie Smith, his childhood sweetheart, died two years after they were married. They had one child, Portia. His second wife, Olivia Davidson, died after four years of marriage; they had two sons, Booker T., Jr., and Ernest Davidson. His third wife, Margaret Murray, outlived him by ten years; they had no children. All three of his wives were teachers at Tuskegee. Washington paid for the education of his brother, John, and an adopted brother, James, then hired them as instructors at Tuskegee. As exhausting schedule and his personal ambition to improve and expand Tuskegee Institue kept Washington away from his home six months of the year. He found occasional moments of relaxation hunting or fishing in West Virginia, or tending the chickens and pigs he raised in the backyard of his Alabama home, the Oaks.

While on a speaking engagement in New York City, Booker T. Washington became ill. Though weak, he wished to return home. He died in Tuskegee on November 14, 1915. He is buried on the Tuskegee Institute campus.

In 1850, James and Elizabeth Burroughs purchased a 177-acre tobacco farm to which they later added 30 acres. It is believed that Booker's mother, Jane was purchased from the estate of a neighbor, Bowker Preston, in 1852. On April 5, 1856, she gave birth to a mulatto son who was given the name Bowker in honor of her previous owner. Booker never knew who his father was, except that he was someone in the neighborhood. In his popular 1901 autobiography, *Up From Slavery*, he wrote that his white father was "simply another unfortunate victim of the institution of slavery."

He also recounted his earliest memories of life as a slave on the Burroughs plantation:

> My life had its beginnings in the midst of the most miserable surroundings. I was born in a typical log cabin, about fourteen by sixteen feet square. In this cabin, I lived with my mother and a brother and a sister till after the Civil War when we were declared free. The cabin was not only our living place, but was also used as the kitchen for the plantation. My mother was the plantation cook. While the poorly built cabin caused us to suffer with cold in the winter, the heat from the open fireplace in the summer was equally as trying.

Because of his age and size, young Booker did not work in the fields; instead he cleaned the yard, carried water to the men in the fields, took corn to the mill, and fanned flies in the dining cabin while the Burroughses ate their meals. One chore was to ride behind Laura Burroughs, the teacher at nearby Frog Hollow School, and return immediately to the farm with the horse. He recalled, "The picture of several dozen boys and girls in a schoolroom engaged in study made a deep impression upon me, and I had a feeling that to get into that schoolhouse and study in this way would be about the same as getting into paradise."

There was an efficient slave grapevine in Hales Ford. "Every success of the Federal armies and every defeat of the Confederate forces was watched with the keenest and most intense interest," he wrote. In 1865 came the news of the Confederate surrender. Shortly after the close of the war, a representative of the Freedmen's Bureau came onto the Burroughs plantation and read the Emancipation Proclamation to their ten slaves. Booker remembered there was great rejoicing followed by solemn and quiet thought. "Freedom was a more serious thing than they expected to find it. The great responsibility of being free, of having charge of themselves, of having to think and plan for themselves and their children, seemed to take possession of them."

For Booker and his family, freedom meant moving to Malden, West Virginia, near Charleston. He went to work in a salt mine and began attending night school; later he went during the day. At school, he discovered that other children had two names. When he was called upon for his name he responded "Booker Washington." He learned his mother had given him the name Taliaferro and this he took as his middle name. □

ROSE MARIE FINNEY, *a native of Franklin County, graduated magna cum laude from Mary Washington College in 1984 and is currently pursuing her master's degree in art history at the University of Virginia. Miss Finney is a seasonal park ranger at Booker T. Washington National Monument.*

ELEANOR C. LONG, *a native of Hagerstown, Maryland, and a 1974 graduate of Virginia Commonwealth University, is a park ranger at Booker T. Washington National Monument.*

Witcher-Clement Case

Langhorne Jones

On February 25, 1860 (126 years ago), at Dickinson's Store near Penhook, Franklin County, James, William, and Ralph Clement, sons of Dr. George C. Clement, were killed; and seventy-one-year-old Captain Vincent Witcher, his son Addison, his grandsons John and Vincent Oliver Smith, and his son-in-law Samuel Swanson were charged with the killings. Tried before a court of five magistrates in Franklin County, the alleged murderers were given a verdict of not guilty by a three to two decision.

Since that date, this episode has been written about and discussed extensively, but accounts vary. Some years ago I found a new interpretation among the papers of William M. Tredway, a lawyer who represented the Witchers and who was later a judge of the circuit court of which Franklin County was a part. His trial notes are most interesting and complete, and give a detailed account of each witness, varying somewhat from other accounts.

The Witcher and Clement clans were very prominent and outstanding citizens, and had large families. Dr. Clement was a graduate of Hampden-Sydney College and the University of Pennsylvania. Captain Vincent Witcher represented Pittsylvania County in the Virginia House of Delegates for twenty years and served two terms in the Senate of Virginia. The Witchers lived at Callands in Pittsylvania County, and the Clements lived near Penhook, close to the Witchers.

The families had been good friends for many years, and when Victoria Smith, a granddaughter of Captain Vincent Witcher, married James Clement, son of Dr. Clement, both families were most pleased. From this marriage one daughter, Lelia Maude Clement, was born.

James Clement was very jealous of his wife, Victoria, and began to accuse her of being too familiar with her former boyfriends, especially William Gilbert and Samuel Berger. (His accusations were later shown to be untrue.) But Clement's jealous behavior continued, and on or about March 1, 1859, the strained relations reached a climax when Victoria fled from their home, fearing violence, to the home of a neighbor. There is some question as to whether or not she left without her six-month-old child.

On account of these strained relations, very bitter feelings developed between the Clement and Witcher families, and a divorce case was commenced by Victoria against James Clement. Depositions seem to have been taken from time to time, culminating in those attempted on February 25, 1860, at Dickinson's Store before Robert Mitchell, a justice of the peace.

In addition to the Witchers mentioned above and the three Clement brothers, there were some eight or more witnesses in attendance. Addison Witcher questioned the witnesses on behalf of Victoria Smith and Ralph Clement on behalf of his brother James. At lunchtime the Clements presented a witness, Elizabeth ("Betty") Bennett.

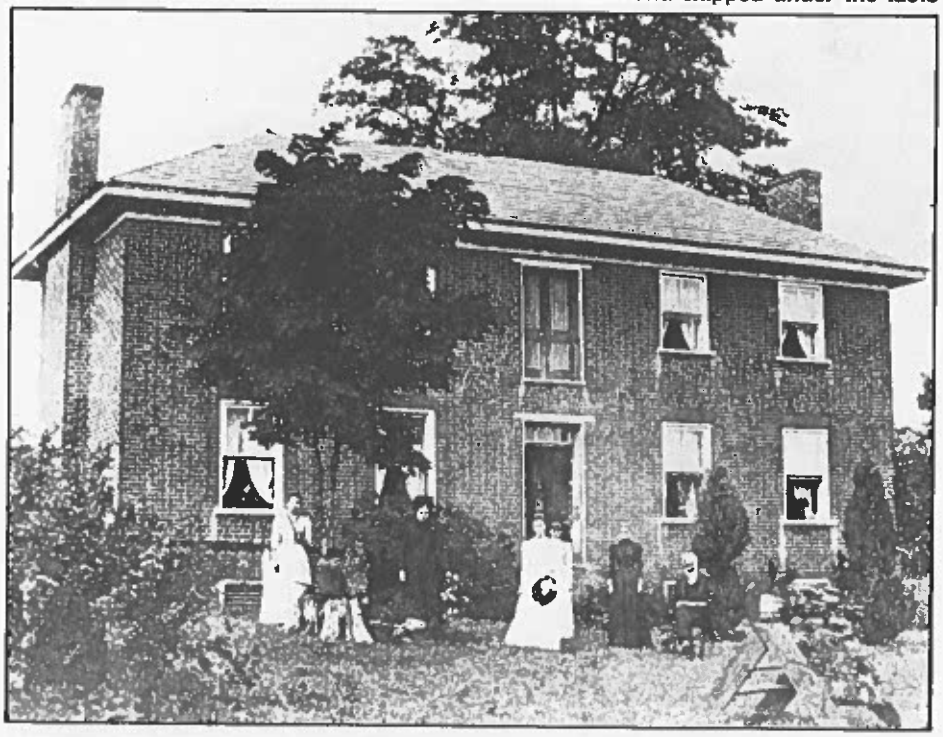
It is very evident that both the Witchers and Clements came to the hearing armed with pistols and knives, either expecting trouble or prepared to cause it. The firing lasted several minutes, resulting in the deaths of the three Clement brothers. One member of the Witcher family was cut and shot in the shoulder. All the living occupants of the room left as soon as possible, jamming the doorway and causing confusion. In the aftermath the Witchers (mentioned above) were charged with the killings and brought to trial.

At the trial, from the notes of Mr. Tredway, the commonwealth contended that Captain Vincent Witcher fired the first shot. The Witchers countered that James Clement fired first.

According to the Tredway notes there were nineteen witnesses at the criminal trial, which lasted two days. William M. Tredway represented the defendants (Witchers). One account of the trial stated that Captain Witcher represented himself. The commonwealth's attorney represented the state. No attempt will be made to give all the witnesses' statements, only a general review of the evidence, since just one or two who described the shooting were eyewitnesses. There was sharp conflict in the evidence.

The commonwealth first introduced Elizabeth ("Betty") Bennett, the witness over whom the argument started. She stated she was at the witness table, heard the remarks between Clement and Witcher, that Captain Witcher rose from his chair and fired his pistol at Ralph Clement, that she dived under the table, and later went upstairs.

She was contradicted in this by George Finney who stated that immediately after the shooting he saw Betty Bennett in the yard and asked her who fired the first shot and she stated "she did not know, that she heard a shot and skipped under the table



"Mountain View" the home of Dr. George Clements on Route 890 near Penhook. Dr. Clements buried his three sons murdered in the feud in a single grave in a small cemetery immediately behind the house. This picture was made in the late nineteenth century.

and then went upstairs."

Ralph M. Powell, called for the defendants, stated: "He saw both Vincent Witcher and Ralph Clement rise from their seats and each reached into his bosom as if to draw a pistol but before either could draw James Clement, who was on the bed in a stooped position, fired a pistol three times and he could see the smoke boiling up around his face." Powell was seated on the steps and had a clear view.

The evidence further showed that Samuel Swanson and James Clement had a struggle, as did Ralph Clement and Addison Witcher. Addison Witcher said, "Don't shoot me, shoot the damn rascal." One of the Smiths shot James Clement; and Ralph Clement also fell saying he was dying. There was other evidence that seemed to corroborate 'his in part.

After the shooting — and there were a number of shots fired — all the survivors left the room and soon some of the witnesses reentered. Ralph Clement was not dead but had two bullet holes in his head and a wound in his face. He was lifted up and on a bed and lived about one and a half to two hours. His pistol was found on his person. Several witnesses testified to these facts.

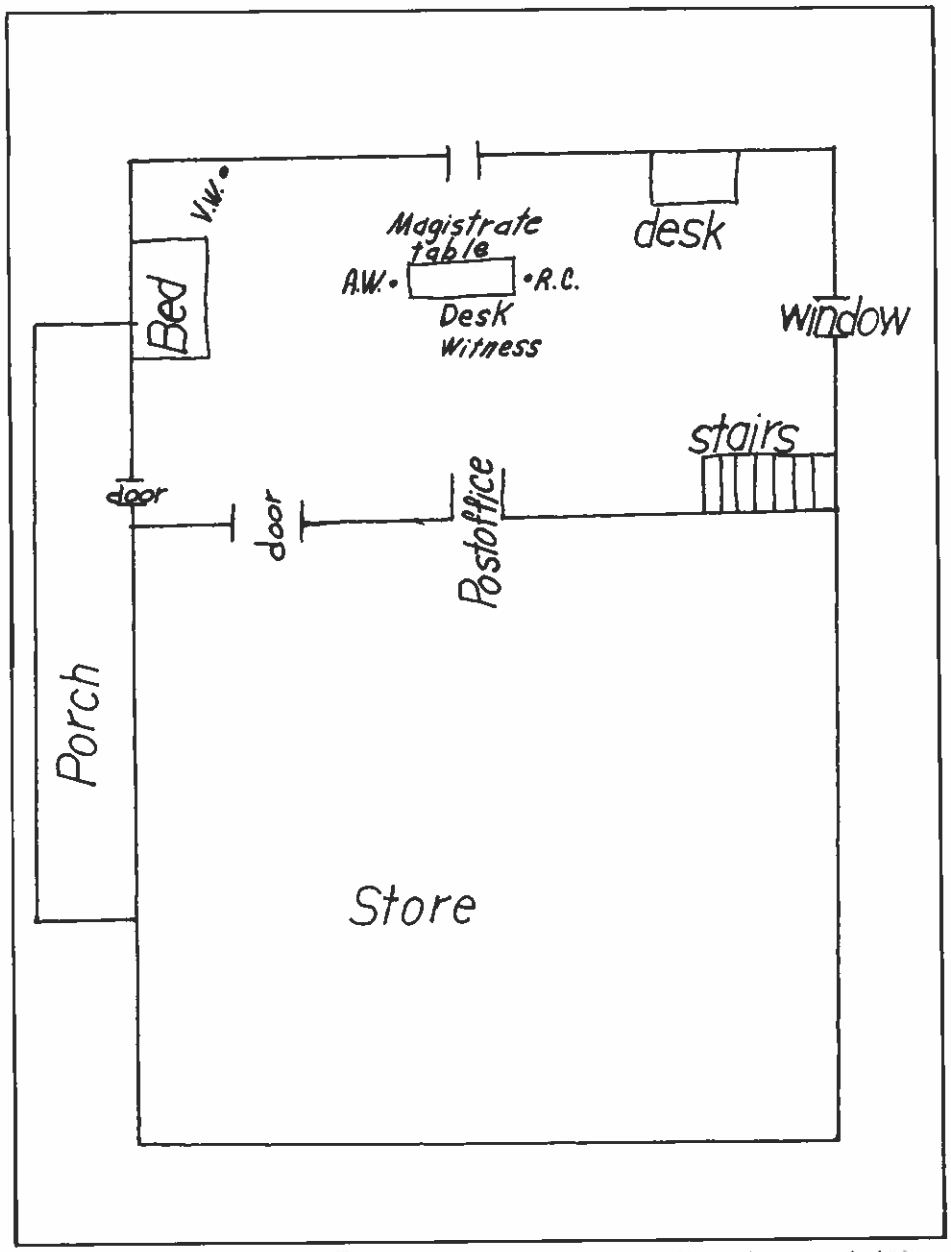
After the shooting Vincent Witcher, Addison Witcher, James Smith, Oliver Smith, and Samuel Swanson left the room. It was shown that James Smith had a knife in his hand; his coat was on fire and had a bullet hole in it. He had also been shot in the shoulder.

There was testimony of at least one threat made by James Clement to Vincent. The witness told of an altercation at Sandy Level between William ("Buck") Gilbert (one of Victoria's old boyfriends) and James Clement and his brother, John or Jonathan (unclear), when one of the Clements was shot. Another witness told that he saw James Clement target shooting. Clement called it "filling his caps" and stated he hoped Vincent Witcher died to keep Clement from having to kill Witcher.

Dr. Thomas Greer, the coroner, stated there were eighteen bullet holes in the Clement brothers, part from entrance and part from exit holes. There were also a number of knife wounds.

The foregoing is simply a brief summary of the evidence given regarding the the shooting and killings. Space will not permit details of each witness's testimony.

The primary difference in the statements here about the shooting is that Betty Bennett's testimony was contradicted. The contradiction lay in the eyewitness account that James Clement had fired first, that James Clement had previously threatened the life of Vincent Witcher, and that James Clement and his brother had had an altercation with Buck Gilbert at Sandy Level. Also, eyewitness stated that a pistol was found by the side of James Clement and there was a cocked pistol in the hand of William Clement.



A sketch of the Washington Dickinson storehouse made from the drawing and notes made during the trial by William Tredway, defense lawyer for the Witchers at their trial for murder of the three Clement boys in 1860.

There was a Masonic lodge at Callands chartered about 1853 named Vincent Witcher Masonic Lodge. Some of the accounts in the past have said Vincent Witcher was turned out of the lodge after the above affair and the lodge dissolved. The records from Grand Lodge of Virginia show that in 1864 Vincent Witcher was still a member in good standing and in 1876 he is listed as living in the area but not affiliated with the lodge.

It was all a tragedy and should not have happened, but hotheads prevailed. The story of the affair has been told and retold since, and undoubtedly will be told again and again.

Note: The writer is indebted to the articles by Marshall Wingfield, A.D. Ramsey, and Ben Rose for some of the background in this article, but the account of the shooting was taken primarily from the Tredway notes. □

JUDGE LANGHORNE JONES, *retired judge of the twenty-second Virginia judicial Circuit of which Franklin is a part and a native and resident of Pittsylvania County, has served as president of the Virginia State Bar Association, and a past member of the Virginia General Assembly, and has received numerous honors including the Outstanding Citizen of Pittsylvania County and the National Citizenship Award of the Daughters of the American Revolution. Judge Jones's great grandfather served as the lawyer for the Witcher family during the trial of 1860. His law notes from that trial were found by Judge Jones in the attic of his great grandfather's store and used for this article.*

The War

Henry Hopkins

Good times were here! The economy was on the upswing for Franklin County and Virginia. Between the 1850 and 1860 censuses real estate values increased from $1,630,344 to $3,895,940. The number of carpenters tripled while cabinetmakers increased from three to twenty-three, indicating a building boom in the county. The population grew from 17,430 in 1850 to 20,098 in 1860.

Franklin County, as well as Virginia and the rest of the South, was reaping the results of the Southern drive to throw off the economic domination of the North. Most manufactured goods came from the Northern states and Virginia had lost most of its direct trade with foreign countries. New York and Philadelphia seaports received most of the imports. Building turnpikes, canals, and railroads was part of the answer along with encouraging manufacturing in the state and buying northern-made goods only where there was no alternative. Virginia had the labor and the raw materials. Its slogan was: "Buy Virginia and Southern-manufactured goods."

Migration from Virginia was another problem. By 1850, almost one-third of those born in Virginia lived in the western and southwestern United States. (The state had to slow the rate of migration.) Cropland in tidewater and piedmont was almost exhausted from constantly raising tobacco. A movement to build up the soil headed by Edmund Ruffin, a Virginia planter, caught on with the large planters in Franklin County, as well as the rest of the state. By 1860, farmers had access to a more efficient means of transportation for grain and tobacco produced in Franklin County; the Virginia and Tennessee Railroad in the adjoining counties of Bedford and Roanoke and the Richmond and Danville Railroad to the southeast of the county brought farmers closer to their markets.

There were eighty-five manufacturing establishments in the county including thirty flour and meal mills, fourteen lumber mills, an iron bar plant, a pig iron plant, seventeen tobacco manufacturing plants, and five wool-carding mills. The tobacco factories, iron bar plant, and pig iron works employed 365 men and 78 women, a total number of factory workers not to be surpassed until 1940.

In the presidential election of 1860, Franklin County voters cast 863 votes for John Bell, whose platform was "The Union, the Constitution, and the enforcement of the laws." There were 1076 votes for John C. Breckinridge who was for no prohibition of slavery in the territories, and 133 for Stephen A. Douglas, whose platform was to let the people in the territories decide whether to be a slave or free. Bell carried Virginia by a 358-vote plurality. Breckinridge got all of the electoral votes of the lower South. Abraham Lincoln, who stood for no further extension of slavery, received only 1,929 votes in Virginia but won the majority of the votes in the Electoral College.

Brothers 2nd Lieutenant Robert (l) and John (r) Hutcherson of Company G 57th Virginia Infantry. Both sustained wounds at Malvern Hill. Robert returned to Franklin County to operate Hutcherson's Mill near Scruggs and grind grain for the Confederate forces. It was this mill that Booker T. Washington brought grain on horseback from the Burrough's plantation. John was a Captain and flag bearer for Company G. He was killed at the stone wall during Pickett's Charge as Franklin County soldiers reached the "High Water Mark of the Confederacy" after the most gallant charge ever staged on American soil.

In December South Carolina seceded, followed by other lower south states. Governor John Letcher by proclamation, convened the Virginia General Assembly on January 7, 1861, to decide Virginia's relationship with other states of the Union.

Franklin County sent two delegates. Jubal A. Early and Peter Saunders, Jr., straight Unionists, received over fifteen hundred votes each. A. Hughes Dillard and A.B. Hancock, who leaned toward secession, received 477 and 292 votes respectively. John C. Carper, a stronger secessionist, received 134 votes.

While the convention was in session, Fort Sumter was fired upon and surrendered to the Confederate States of America. President Lincoln called for troops to put down the "rebellion." Virginia was asked to furnish 2,340 troops. On April 17, the Ordinance of Secession was passed by the convention and signed by both Jubal Early and Peter Saunders, Jr. Before the ordinance could become effective, the voters in the counties had to approve it on May 23. But on April 25, Joseph Hambrick, a VMI graduate, enrolled an infantry company. Peter Guerrant, James and Peter Callaway, and others donated money for volunteers and equipment. The May county court promised that it would appropriate at least $10,000 for equipping and paying the troops. Dr. T.B. Greer wrote to Jubal Early, who had offered his services to the state of Virginia and who was then at Lynchburg, with orders to organize six regiments, that "the people here are so resolved,...even the Dutch are all right...Ben Wray...is strong for resistance. He will write forthwith for his nephew in Indiana to come home by the Southern route." By May 20, Giles Hale had also enrolled a cavalry company.

When the vote was held on May 23 only 104 in Franklin County voted against the Ordinance of Secession, while in Roanoke and Pittsylvania Counties, no one voted against it. Seven days later, a Rocky Mount girl writing to a friend, complained that the "young men were thinking about something else besides marrying now. They were thinking about fighting Yankees."

At the June court, the gentlemen justices voted $50,000 to pay and equip the volunteers and to aid indigent soldiers and their families. The money was to be raised by the countys selling bonds. Also in June, Thomas S. Taylor, a VMI graduate, enlisted an infantry unit composed of men from the Hales Ford area. About the same time, Samuel Hale enlisted volunteers from the Callaway and Bonbrook areas.

These four companies were all mustered into the Confederate army at Lynchburg, where they were trained, equipped, and assigned to a regiment. Captains Hambrick's and Taylor's companies became B and C companies of the 24th Virginia Volunteer Regiment. Captain Giles Hale's cavalry company became D Company, 30th Virginia Volunteer Cavalry Regiment, later known as Company D, 2d Virginia Volunteer Cavalry Regiment. Captain Samuel Hale's company

became Company K, 42d Virginia Volunteer Infantry Regiment. In May of 1862, these regiments would drop the volunteer designation since they now had to sign up for three years or the duration of the war.

In June, the 24th and 30th regiments were ordered to Manassas Junction. They were there four weeks before the first battle of Manassas. During the maneuvering and fighting in the battle, the 24th Regiment kept the Union troops from crossing Bull Run Creek at Blackburn's Ford, which was several miles from the actual battle. After the Union army was routed by the Confederates, the 30th Virginia Cavalry was ordered to attack and captured ten cannon and caissons and forty-six horses. Mark Holland, of the Franklin Rangers (Company D, 30th Virginia Volunteer Cavalry Regiment) wrote home to his father, Asa Holland, of Hales Ford, proclaiming "that day, the greatest battle ever was fought in America. ...Northern tyranny and Yankee oppression was made to feel the weight of Southern armies in the hands of the oppressed and outraged people."

The 42d Virginia Regiment left Lynchburg about the middle of July. They took part in the campaign in the mountains of western Virginia. Diseases and the elements were the greatest foes in their campaign.

Other companies recruited mainly from Franklin County were Company B, enlisted June 15, 1861, and captained by Waddy T. James, John H. Smith, and John L. Ward; Company C, enlisted June 21, 1861, and captained by Edward T. Bridges, David P. Heckman, and Charles H. Jones; Company G, enlisted July 13, 1861, and captained by Benjamin H. Wade, and Daniel Arrington (all of the above companies belonged to the 57th Virginia Volunteer Infantry Regiment) Company D, enlisted July 23, 1861, and captained by Dewitt C. Booth, Thomas H. Franklin, and William C. Ridgeway; Company E, enlisted July, 1861, and captained by Jacob L. Holley, William P.H. Brown, and Samuel S. Turner (companies D and E belonged to the 58th Virginia Volunteer Infantry Regiment); Company A, organized May 3, 1861, mustered into Confederate service June 9, 1861, and captained by Robert A. Caskie, and Edwin A. Fulcher; Company C, organized March 20, 1862, and captained by William W. Flood, Nathaniel Richerson, and William A.B. Wingfield; Company K organized June 1, 1861, and captained by J. Travis Rosser, James L. Dickson, and William L. Graham (these three companies belonged to the 10th Virginia Cavalry Regiment); Company A, organized August 1, 1862, and captained by James R. Claiborn and George T. Williams; Company G, organized February 6, 1863, and captained by Edward T. Bridges (these two companies belonged to the 37th Virginia Cavalry Battalion).

A reunion photo of Company A 37th Battalion of the Virginia Calvary (Confederate States of America) taken in Rocky Mount, Virginia on August 11, 1909. The photo was taken at the home of Owen H. Price who is pictured along with his wife. Mr. Price was not a member of "A" Company.

On February 17, 1864, the Confederate States Congress passed an act that extended the age limit of conscripts from eighteen to forty-five to include all white men between the ages of seventeen and fifty. Those between the ages of seventeen and eighteen and forty-five and fifty were to constitute a reserve force for state defense and detail duty. Of the 3rd Virginia Reserve Battalion, Company B, captained by J.O.A. Rogers; Company G, captained by O.C. Clark; and Company D, captained by William H. Wheary, were mainly from Franklin County. These companies built fortifications and performed guard and picket duty from Richmond to Danville.

The 58th and the 42d regiments in the army and corps were under the commands of Generals Thomas J. ("Stonewall") Jackson, Richard S. Ewell, and Jubal A. Early. They took part in Jackson's Valley campaign in 1862, the Peninsular campaign, Second Manassas, Chancellorsville, Antietam, Gettysburg (the 58th took prisoners to Staunton, but joined Swell's Corps in their retreat from Pennsylvania), the Wilderness Campaign, Spotsylvania Court House, and Jubal Early's invasion of Pennsylvania in 1864.

The 24th and the 57th fought under General James Longstreet's Corps most of the war, except in Longstreet's campaign in the West at Chickamauga and east Tennessee. The 24th won respect for bravery in the battle of Williamsburg. The 24th and the 57th were assigned to Pickett's division and were in Pickett's charge at Gettsyburg.

After the reorganization of the Army of Northern Virginia in 1862, the 2d and 10th Virginia Cavalry regiments were assigned to General J.E.B. Stuart's Cavalry Corps. In the spring of 1862, the 2d assisted General Jackson in the Valley campaign. The 2d did not surrender at Appomattox but disbanded at Lynchburg where it had been mustered into service in 1861.

From 1862 until the spring of 1864, the 37th Virginia Cavalry Battalion campaigned in southwestern Virginia and eastern Tennessee, under the command of General William E. ("Grumble") Jones. The battalion was assigned to Jubal Early's army when he invaded Pennsylvania. It was disbanded at Lynchburg after Joseph E. Johnston had surrendered in North Carolina.

There were other Franklin natives in other units, such as the 19th and 21st Virginia Cavalry and the 34th, 36th, 43d, 51st, 53d Virginia Infantry Regiments. In an incomplete listing of those who served from Franklin, over nineteen hundred served and more than three hundred died in service. About eighty-five were killed in action or died from wounds, forty or more died in Union prisoner of war camps. Soldiers who con-

tracted measles, which developed into pneumonia, accounted for most of the deaths.

On the home front, the fund for indigent soldiers began supporting families in the late summer of 1862. By February of 1865, about 2,000 people were receiving aid. This included free blacks, as well as whites. For instance, Miley Dunnings, a free black, was listed as receiving aid.

By the winter of 1864, wheat was in short supply so corn was furnished for bread to the families. Still, they had difficulty getting enough grain, so the gentlemen justies appealed to and received from the Confederate authorities grain stored in the county. The gentlemen justices also resorted to impressing grain from those that had it, paying the market price.

The war seems to have affected the birth and death rates in the county. In 1860, there were 772 births to 270 deaths. In 1861, there were 634 births to 362 deaths. Then in 1862, there were 532 births to 548 deaths. Nothing was recorded for the year 1863 but in 1864, there were 260 births and 178 deaths reported. A year after the war was over, in 1866, there were 510 births and 153 deaths.

There were 6,351 slaves and 105 free persons of color counted in the 1860 census of the county. Over 600 people owned slaves. Patrols, which were used before the war to keep watch over the slaves to keep them on their home plantations, were continued during the conflict. The last patrols were appointed by the February court in 1865. During the winter months of 1863, 1864, and 1865, Franklin County slaveholders furnished slaves to help erect fortification around Richmond and Petersburg. Male slaves went to war with their masters as body servants, performing some of the duties of soldiers. If a slave's master happened to be in the cavalry, he would hold the horse while his master fought on foot. In the 1910 census, four blacks said they had been in the Confederate army. Other slaves continued to work on the farms producing food.

There were problems with Confederate deserters in the county. After two deserters had burned some barns and intimidated some women and children in the Gogginsville area, they were caught by the home guard and executed before a firing squad.

In February of 1865, it was reported by an enrollment officer that Captain Peter Saunders, Jr., announced at the court that "the South is subjugated and it is vain and foolish to make any further resistance, but to submit on the best terms possible."

In 1864, there had been some fear that the Yankees under General David Hunter (who had burned VMI) would come through Franklin County, but General Early defeated him at Lynchburg and the Union army retreated into southwestern Virginia. Only in the last days of the war did Union troops come through the county. General George Stoneman's cavalry troops came through by way of Bedford and another part of his troops came through Endicott by Henry on their way to North Carolina. Local citizens reported that the soldiers took some horses and meat and destroyed some barrels of molasses.

In the May court of 1865, it was reported to the gentlemen justices that there was much unlawfulness in the county. Mark Holland was one of several appointed to come to the aid of those being molested.

The census of 1870 reflected the effects of the war on the county. The population of the county in 1870 was 18,264, a decrease of 1,834. The value of real property was $1,899,735 and personal property was valued at $792,201. The real property in 1860 had been $3,895,940 and the personal property $6,707,027. Slaves had been included as personal property in 1860. □

HENRY HOPKINS, *a native of Franklin County and son of the late Judge A.H. Hopkins and Catherine Lee Hopkins, is a dairyman, a past history teacher in the public school system of Franklin County, and an avid researcher and student of local history.*

A Fourth of July Reunion of Conferedate soldiers before the Confederate Monument at the Franklin Courthouse. Mary Chitwood, the wife of Dr. Chitwood, and a member of the United Daughters of the Confederacy is in the front row. The building behind was the old 'Early House' tavern and hotel, later called The Chronicle Building.

What Did The Privates Do?

Captain Giles W. B. Hale

Our stories teem with wondrous deeds, our books are filled with fame
Brass bands do play, and cannons roar, in honor of the name
Of men who were Officers, and who were honest, brave and true -
But still the question comes to me, "What did the Privates do?"

Who were the men to guard the camp when foes were hovering 'round?
Who dug the graves of comrades dear, who placed them in the ground?
Who sent the dying message home to friends the dead men knew?
If Officers did all this, what did the Privates do?

Who were the men to fill the place of comrades slain in strife?
Who were the men to risk their own to save their buddies' life?
Who was it that lived on salted pork and bread too hard to chew?
If Officers did all this, what did the Privates do?

Who lay in pits on rainy nights, all eager for the fray?
Who marched beneath the scorching sun on many a toilsome day?
Who paid the sutler twice the price, and scanty rations drew?
If Officers did all this, pray, what did the Privates do?

Who led the van at Malvern Hill where slaughter marked the day?
Who gave the Yanks that bitter pill at Manassas - Halt and say!
Who at Shiloh waged that bloody fight, when Grant's army fairly flew?
If Officers did all this, say, what did the Privates do?

Who at Gettysburg made that gallant charge when whole commands
did melt away?
Who at Sharpsburg scaled those bloody heights, and stood the brunt
throughout the day?
Who was it that fought against such fearful odds, and from the world
high praises drew?
If Officers alone did this, say, what did the Privates do?

CAPTAIN GILES W.B. HALE *was born in 1840, the great grandson of Thomas Hale of Hale's Ford. He left Emory and Henry College to become captain of Company D, 2nd Virginia Cavalry, composed entirely of Franklin County soldiers. Later he was transferred to the staff of General Jubal A. Early as an aide. After the war he returned to Franklin and acquired the old tavern on the site of the present Price-Perdue building which he named Early House in honor of General Early. He lived in the old house across the street (below the Mount Theater) built in 1834 by Dr. Richard Taliaferro. Captain Hale became the first mayor of Rocky Mount in 1873 and had the honor of having the engine of the F&P Railroad named for him. He was married to Josephine Claiborne, daughter of Congressman Nathaniel Claiborne. After his wife's death he moved to a small house near the N&W depot where he wrote extensively and entertained his friends. From the time of the Civil War he had been told he had tuberculosis. He was determined to cure himself—living and sleeping in the open and riding horseback even when he was too weak to mount. He died in 1934 at the age of 93.*

"I heard there was a Yankee at the Court House": The United States Freedmen's Bureau in Franklin County, 1865-1868

Charles C. Wall, Jr.

Did the Yankee army occupy Franklin County during the Civil War? No! But, in the period immediately after the war, a United States military officer was stationed in Rocky Mount to supervise the reconstruction of the county back into the Union. Four Union officers, who served separate tours of duty between 1865 and 1868, were assigned to Franklin County as representatives of the United States Bureau of Refugees, Freedmen, and Abandoned Lands, commonly known as the Freedmen's Bureau. The key officer to serve in Franklin County was First Lieutenant William F. DeKnight. DeKnight, age thirty-one, was a civil engineer by profession from New York; he was a resident from August 1866 to October 1867. All the Union army officers became closely involved in all facets of the lives of Franklin County citizens, both white and black.

The functions of the Freedmen's Bureau and its officers varied as the Reconstruction policies of the United States government toward the South changed but the essential task of the bureau was to protect and advance the freedmen during the immediate aftermath of slavery. The bureau provided relief in the form of food, clothes and seed grain, secured work and enforced fair labor contracts for the freedmen, informed the freedmen of their legal rights and responsibilities, and tried to protect the freedmen from physical abuse by the white population. The bureau's officers were required to report at length on the socioeconomic conditions of the district they served and in particular assess the attitude of the local white population regarding the rights of the freedmen. When federal Reconstruciton policies granted blacks full citizenship and voting rights (under the Civil Rights Act of 1866 and the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution), the bureau registered black males to vote and saw to it that they voted without harassment or molestation. In carrying out these assignments, the four officers stationed in Franklin County assumed a variety of roles. They were the first full-time federal bureaucrats to appear in Franklin County besides the post office employees. Officially, the officers were "Assistant Sub-Assistant Commissioners of the Seventh Sub-District, Fourth Division, State of Virginia, United States Freedmen's Bureau." More practically on a day-to-day basis, the officers functioned as social workers, sociologists, judges, military commissioners, political organizers, lobbyists, school reformers and as the hated Carpetbaggers blended from historical legend and fact. Perhaps most importantly for posterity, these Yankees kept numerous records that have been preserved and that make their work here one of the most significant chronicles of Franklin County history.

The tense, often bitter, interaction between the Freedmen's Bureau officers and the local white population was the most interesting feature of the bureau's presence in Franklin County. The officers' many reports to headquarters make clear that a large segment of the white population consisted of "unreconstructed rebels" who certainly did not practice "Southern hospitality" to these Yankee "aggressors and occupiers" of Rocky Mount. Some residents openly insulted the officers as they walked the streets of Rocky Mount or threatened them with violence. On their part the officers often "named names" and commented at length to higher federal authorities on the attitudes, loyalty, and even moral standards of the local population. In addition to naming those who opposed federal Reconstruction policies or who mistreated the freedmen, they also identified local residents who had been loyal to the Union during the war (Unionists) or who were cooperating with the United States government during Reconstruction.

Several incidents illustrate the strained relations between the Union officers and white Franklin County residents. In an angry, often testy letter on March 24, 1867, Lieutenant William F. DeKnight elaborated on the many insults hurled at him and the United States government. Residents of Rocky Mount regularly sang Confederate songs and "denounced and reviled in bitter and unmeasured terms" the Congress in a manner that ensured he would hear their comments. Perhaps because they had no political rights to lose for their actions, women were often quite outspoken in their angry expressions against the Yankees. According to Lieutenant DeKnight, "Miss Alice Hale . . . once in my presence among other epithets called our late lamented President a rascal and said it was the best thing ever happened for the country that he was killed and he ought to have been killed long before he was."

For the most part, the officers insulted and villified at their lonely post by local whites had little recourse but to vent their anger in letters written to higher authorities in the Freedmen's Bureau. However, on one occasion, Lieutenant DeKnight did have John Saunders, who was visiting from Bedford County, jailed for his "contemptuous and insulting language towards the 'Flag of the Country.'" Saunders and several residents had tried to intimidate the local black political organization, the Union League, and dissuade them from making and flying a United States flag. These angry protests by the white community against the officers representing the federal government stayed verbal (and the gunshots missed their mark) because residents knew that any real physical harm against the officers would almost surely have brought a detachment of United States Army troops from Lynchburg and perhaps even martial law to the county.

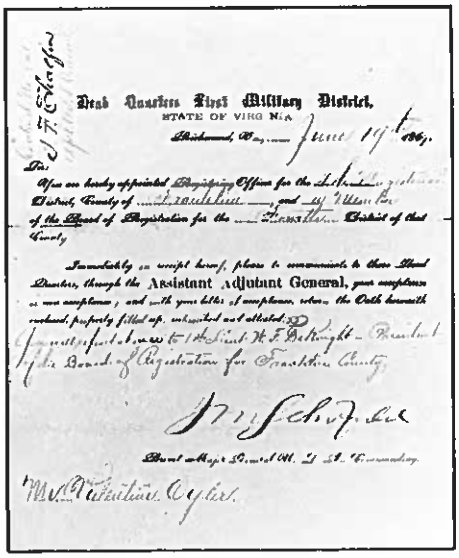
The Freedmen's Bureau's main task was to protect blacks from injustice and oppression whether coming from private or governmental action or inaction. The black community eagerly sought counsel and assistance from the bureau's officers in stark contrast to the white community's reaction to the bureau. Contrary to what is often thought about Reconstruction, the United States military did not normally supersede southern civilian governments and rule by martial law. In his efforts to protect blacks Lieutenant DeKnight, in fact, often complained of his helplessness to stop the injustice he found apparent in the Franklin County judicial process. United States military authorities could and did assume at times governmental authority in areas of the South and Virginia if riotous or murderous violence against the freedmen became epidemic and civilian governments exercised no control. Federal authorities also bypassed local governments to register black voters.

The bureau's records document numerous cases of assault by whites against blacks but fortunately no organized terrorism, murder or race rioting. The principal reason for white assault, according to DeKnight, was blacks committing "the crime of insolence." As a free people, blacks questioned the often unfair implementation of labor contracts; they asserted their right to

ask questions. According to Lieutenant DeKnight, "any attempt on the part of a colored person to gainsay the assertion of a white is almost sure to be characterized as insolence . . . whereas any immediate langauge, no matter how strong or extreme from the latter to the former, would never be regarded as affording excuse even for a retort." When blacks brought cases of assault against them to a justice of the peace or the grand jury, action against white defendants was rarely if ever undertaken, in spite of the constant watchfulness of the bureau. The officers felt that racism, frustration at losing the war, and the dismal economic conditions were behind the whites' mistreatment of the freedmen. On the positive side, by 1867, Lieutenant DeKnight and his successors were reporting that incidents of physical abuse had virtually ceased, though feelings were still bitter toward both the blacks and Yankees. Certainly one major reason for the continued bitterness.of the white population derived from black political activity and its sponsorship by the Freedmen's Bureau.

While the activities of the Freedmen's Bureau in Franklin County were focused principally on the immediate protection of the freedmen from injury and their political advancement, the bureau also engaged in many social reform efforts intended to improve the quality of life for the freedmen. The officers secured social and medical services for the freedmen, urged them to undertake self-help projects, and tried to start schools for them. The officers routinely monitored the county poorhouses to ensure minimal standards were maintained for blacks consistent with those for whites. Prompted by an appeal from a newly arrived physician that local doctors, out of financial considerations, largely ignored the medical needs of the black community, Lieutenant DeKnight tried to obtain federal funds to support medical services. The regional district office of the bureau approved his request to provide limited medical supplies but refused to pay the salary of a local physician specifically to serve the black community. In an unsuccessful effort the officers tried to convince the leaders of the black community to form a temperance association known as the Lincoln Temperance Society. But by far the most important reform sought by the Freedmen's Bureau was establishing permanent schools — public or private — for the freedmen of all ages.

As was the case throughout the South, the Freedmen's Bureau officers in Franklin County were formally directed by state headquarters to start and coordinate a movement that would lead to schooling for the black population. Their instructions were quite detailed and came in the form of printed "Circular No. 23," which listed eleven questions the officers must answer. While



Evidence of the presence of the Freedman's Bureau in Franklin County is witnessed by this official doument.

many of the questions covered matters such as blackboards, books, and heating school buildings, the key query the officers had to respond to dealt with the attitude of the white community toward education of the freedmen. It was on this subject that Lieutenant DeKnight, for example, wrote an eight-page confidential letter to Freedmen's Bureau headquarters.

The Union officers in Franklin County firmly believed the white population was hostile to any publicly subsidized education for the freedmen and just as negative toward any private efforts emerging from northern philanthropy or involving volunteer teachers from the North. The black community, for its part, was keenly interested in educational efforts made on its behalf. Blacks attended special meetings organized by the bureau to discuss the founding of schools, and several individuals volunteered to help through the donation of rent-free land. According to Lieutenant DeKnight, the motivaiton behind the vehement white opposition was a racist desire to keep blacks subservient: "The actuating cause throughout all this, however, it is easy to be seen, is really a great fear of losing forever that absolute control heretofore exercised over the slave, through the medium of his consumate ignorance and degraded moral condition." DeKnight found it ironic that the freedmen were held accountable for every violation of law but had no access to education. More practically, DeKnight was told by John A. Hale, a person whom he considered "one of the principal men in this place," that a teacher from the North, whether female or male, would find it most difficult to find lodging and would be the subject of openly expresed resentment. Hale cautioned the Union officers to go slow on education until "some of the citizens themselves should make a move on the matter."

Although it began slowly, progress in education came to Franklin County while the Freedmen's Bureau was still in operation. Under persistent prodding by Lieutenant DeKnight, the white community initiated the first formal schooling for the freedmen. Sabbath schools for blacks began operation in Gogginsville and Rocky Mount in 1867. The founders of the Gogginsville school — T.L. Reynolds, R.R. Lavinder, S.T. Helms, and L.C. Bell — expressed the desire to "do all we can and hope for good results." Forty-six black men and women attended the first session of the Gogginsville Sabbath School even though its opening session had not been widely publicized. Showing personal satisfaction at these efforts by the white community, Lieutenant DeKnight quickly requested that the American Tract Society furnish without expense the necessary books that the school's founders needed to operate with. The American Tract Society complied with DeKnight's request and praised him for his good work in Franklin County. By the end of the summer of 1867, DeKnight was able to write positively of the efforts of Franklin County to educate a previously neglected portion of its population: "It is a common thing to see even grown women everywhere going over their books on every available opportunity during the day." In the statewide sphere, Virginia, under pressure from United States Reconstruction policies, adopted its first public school requirement in the newly written State Constitution of 1869.

Reconstruciton was both a time and a process. It was difficult for the whole nation — South and North, black and white. Much injustice and bitterness were present but at the same time progress toward improving the status of the freedmen was accomplished through the agency of the Freedmen's Bureau and at times by the white community itself. Certainly, the presence of the Freedmen's Bureau in Franklin County was not sought, welcomed, or appreciated by the white community. The bureau's policies, however, were mild compared to what might have been expected after a bloody civil war, and its tenure was short. The Freedmen's Bureau and its lone Union officers had left the county by 1869. The bureau's main direct legacy to Franklin County are its voluminous records on the county during Reconstruction, which are stored in the National Archives of the United States and are available on microfilm in the Stanley Library of Ferrum College. □

CHARLES WALL, *is professor of history at Ferrum College and an active member of the Franklin County Historical Society. For many years he has been engaged in local historical research, much of which has been incorporated in local historical drama productions by Ferrum College.*

Some of the Early History of Rocky Mount Before its Incorporation in 1873

Natalie West

The area that now comprises Rocky Mount and Franklin County was possibly explored as early as 1670 by John Lederer, by Batts and Fallam in 1671, and by Louis Michael in 1702. These white men and early Indian traders found inhabitants of the region to be of Siouan stock and generally peaceable.

In 1738 the Virginia General Assembly in an effort to encourage settlement of western Brunswick County from which Franklin would eventually evolve passed a law allowing ten years of tax-free living for all who would settle the land.

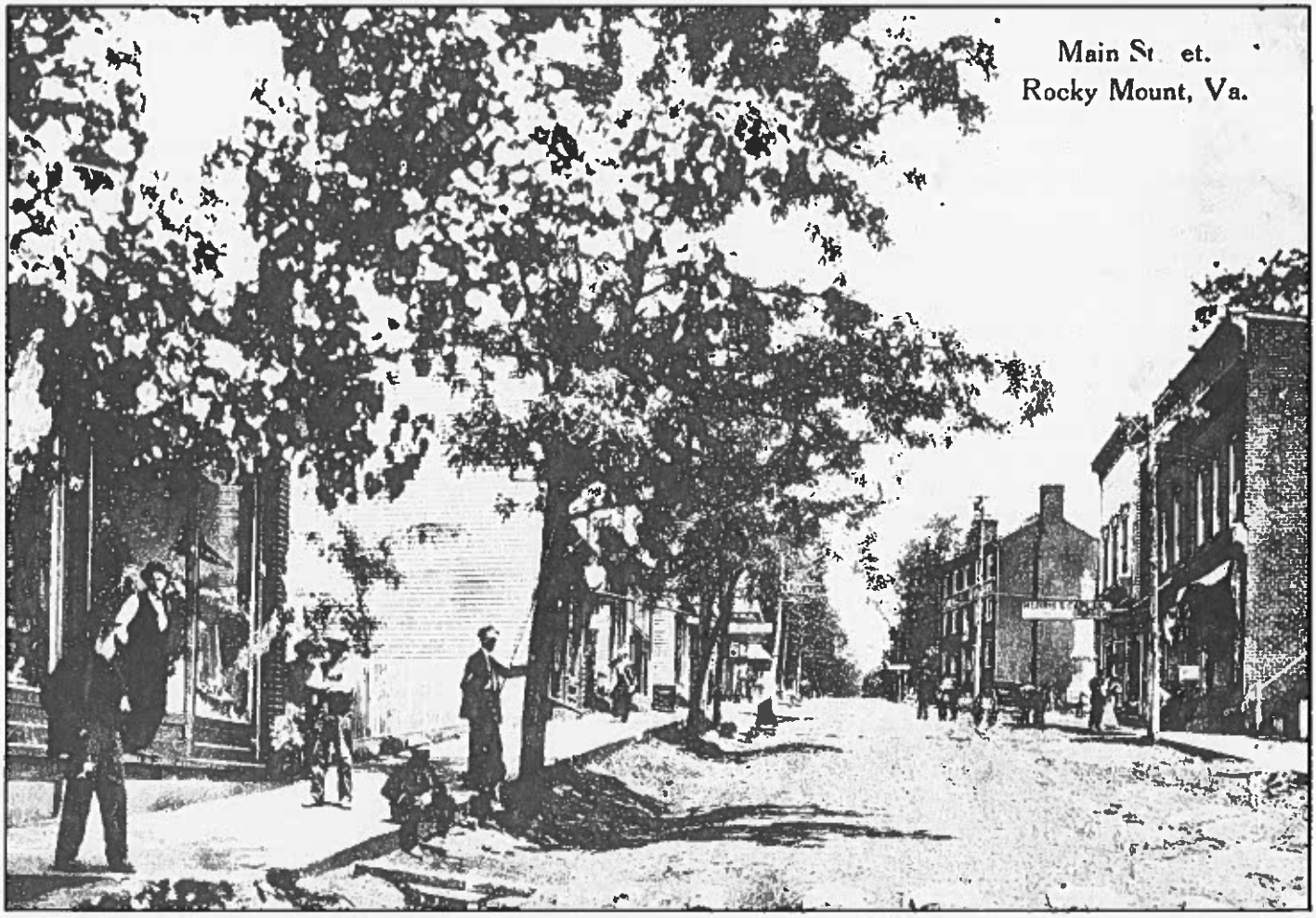
Many of those who later responded in the 1740s would move farther westward through present Bedford and Pittsylvania counties and were generally of English and Scots ancestry. Those coming south from Pennsylvania via the Great Wagon Road were Scotch-Irish or Irish, while the German Baptist later followed the same route.

Even before the formation of the town, the Rocky Mount area was served by a network of roads from all directions converging on the iron plantation established there in 1773. Iron products were essential to the development of the area. With the formation of the new county in 1786, the area found itself near the geographic center. The first court was directed to be held at James Callaway's house at the ironworks and Callaway lost no time in giving the present courthouse tract for the new log courthouse. At the same time he built a large tavern adjacent to the courthouse at the present site of the Price-Perdue Building. From these two structures evolved Rocky Mount.

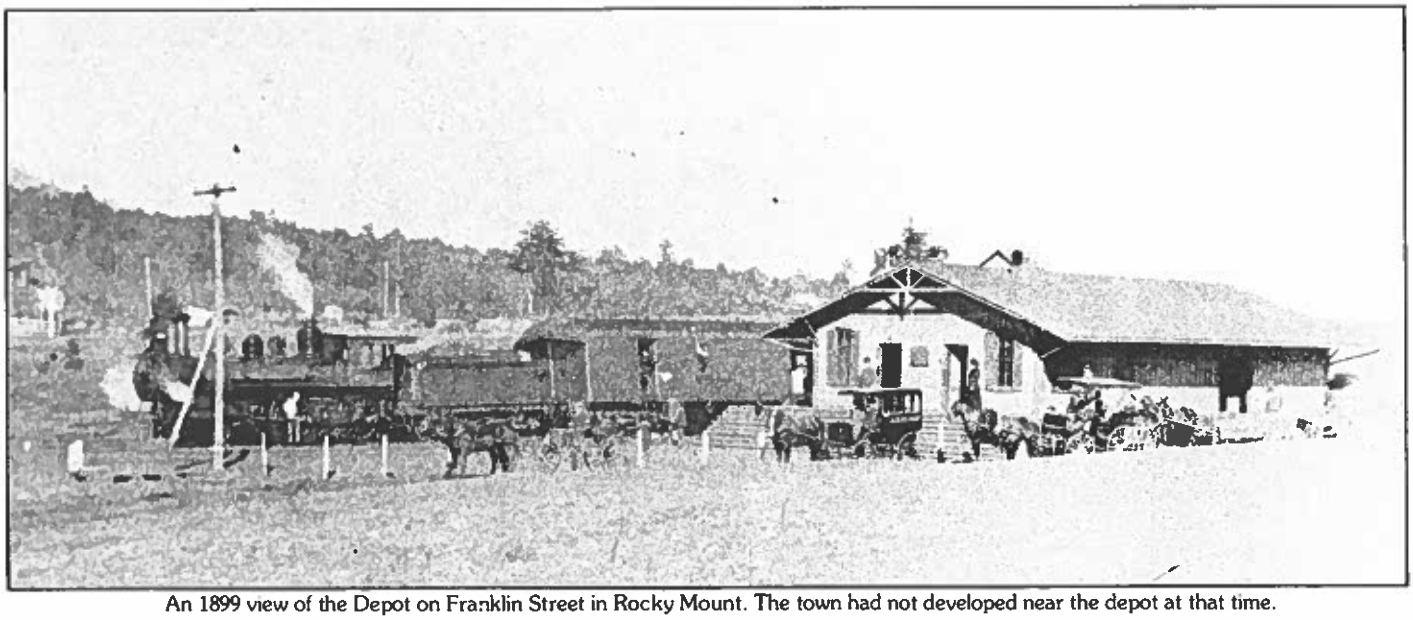
Before long there were two small and distinctly different towns in what is now the incorporated town of Rocky Mount: Rocky Mount and Mount Pleasant. Mount Pleasant was on the east side of what is presently Maple Avenue, while Rocky Mount was on the west side.

There is a deed in the Franklin County Clerk's Office dated October 8, 1805, from James Callaway and Thomas Hill, two of the largest landowners of the period. This deed named the nine trustees of the town of Mount Pleasant. Another reference to Mount Pleasant states that on December 2, 1852, a petition was made to "close an alley some 15 feet wide, running west and known as the Southern Alley, dividing the town into two parts, one bearing the name of Rocky Mount and the other Mount Pleasant."

There was much antagonism between the residents of Mount Pleasant and Rocky Mount, and the social ostracism was mutally practiced. Tradition has it that the antagonism was the result of a personal feud



This picture of Main Street, Rocky Mount in the early 1900s shows the stepping stones across Main Street to keep pedestrians out of the mud.



An 1899 view of the Depot on Franklin Street in Rocky Mount. The town had not developed near the depot at that time.

between two prominent families of the time. Long after the two villages became one town of Rocky Mount, the inherent rivalry manifested itself in sports events between the residents of "uptown" and "downtown."

During the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, the leading business of Rocky Mount was the mining and forging of iron. Iron deposits existed in a long, low ridge parallel to Grassy Hill and just outside the town to the west of Rocky Mount. From these mines the owners of the iron furnace secured their raw materials to be converted into commercial or military use for such purposes as pots, ovens, wagon tires, and cannon balls.

Survivor of Rocky Mount's iron industry is the Washington Furnace, which still stands on the Henry Robinson property off South Main Street. The builder of this eighteenth-century iron plantation was Colonel John Donelson, father of Rachel Donelson who married Andrew Jackson. In 1779, Colonel Donelson sold the iron works of Jeremiah Early, great-grandfather of General Jubal A. Early, and to James Callaway. The present blast furnace was then erected, the plantation expanded, and named Washington Iron Works in honor of George Washington. At Early's death his interest was sold to James Callaway. About 1820, James Callaway's heirs sold the furnace to the Saunders brothers, Peter, Jr., Samuel, and Fleming. The property remained in the hands of members of the Saunders family until recent years. Munitions of war were made at the Washington Iron Works during the American Revolution and the Civil War.

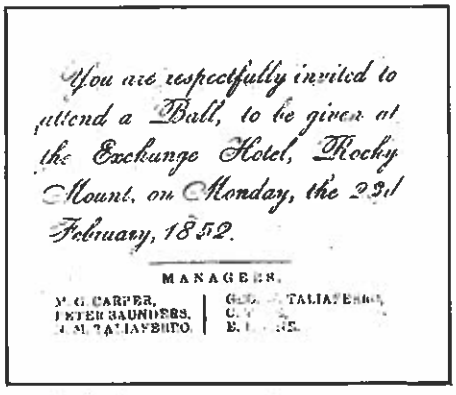
In 1836 it was reported that the iron industry employed 100 men, and that 160 tons of bar iron and castings were manufactured each year. At that time, the town's population, excluding the iron workers, was only 175.

The Washington Iron Works was part of a large iron plantation of over 18,000 acres of land. The ironmaster lived at The Farm at the furnace, which is said to have been the house of James Callaway where the first Franklin County Court was held on January 2, 1786. The Farm is now the home of Dr. and Mrs. J. Francis Amos and family.

Joseph Martin's *Gazeteer of Virginia*, published in 1836, had the following to say of Rocky Mount: the town has "about 30 dwelling houses, 3 general stores, and 2 taverns -the merchanics are 2 tailors, a saddler, cabinet maker, 2 blacksmiths, a boot and shoe manufacturer, a printing office, which issues a weekly paper, and a tan yard." The town was also recorded as having three attorneys and one physician.

The 1853 Gazetteer describes Rocky Mount as the "capt. of Franklin Co., Virg.; on n. side of Pigg r., a tributary of Roanoke r., 134 m. w.s.w. Richmond. It contains a court house, jail, stores, tannery and an iron furnace, which employs 100 laborers. Pop. about 450."

John S. Wise's book, *The End of An Era*, describes life in Rocky Mount in 1862 as that of a typical mountain village, where nearly everyone traveled on horseback. The main street was depicted as "a rocky lane upon a sharp decline, with stores and houses on either side, terminating at an enclosure where stood the court house, clerk's office and county jail." Half way down the street was the tavern, "the rallying point of the town: hither all news came; here all news was discussed; hence all news was disseminated." From this tavern the daily stages departed in the morning, and brought mail and passengers in the evening. It was on this tavern porch that the locals would draw out General Jubal Early about his views of men and events, discussions that Early thoroughly enjoyed. Rocky Mount's Confederate soldiers also brought news to the porch sitters.



You are respectfully invited to attend a Ball, to be given at the Exchange Hotel, Rocky Mount, on Monday, the 23d February, 1852.

MANAGERS.

M. G. CARPER, PETER SAUNDERS, J. M. TALIAFERRO. | G. [illegible] TALIAFERRO, C. [illegible], E. [illegible]

Social life in Rocky Mount is reflected by this invitation to a ball at the Exchange Hotel in 1852.

The years following the Civil War were as difficult for Rocky Mount residents as they were for the rest of the South. The town changed very little in the years following the war until its incorporation on February 17, 1873, by an act of the Virginia General Assembly.

The incorporation act gave the boundaries of the town as one-half mile from the courthouse east, west, north, and south, and all areas contained therein; an area of one square mile. The original governing body consisted of Giles W. B. Hale, Hughes Dillard, Thomas B. Greer, John I. Saunders, William E. Andrews, Hugh Nelson, and Robert A. Scott. Captain G.W.B. Hale served without compensation as the first mayor of Rocky Mount. □

NATALIE WEST, *a native of Rocky Mount, taught in the public school system of Virginia for nineteen years and served on the Longwood College Board of Visitors for nine years, presently serves as chairman of the board of Rocky Mount Methodist Church, on the Advisory Committee to the President of Ferrum College, and as a member of the West Piedmont Planning District Committee.*

Franklin County Public Schools

Harold W. Ramsey
Edited by: Morris Law

Early Beginnings

The history of education in Franklin County would not be complete without recounting some of the efforts made prior to 1870, the beginning of a statewide system of public schools. Although the records are few and fragmentary, there is evidence that a combination of private and "free schools" did exist.

The Literary Fund of Virginia was established by the legislature in 1810, with the proceeds to be used for education. The act establishing the fund was not very effective, however, until 1829 when it was strengthened by providing that the proceeds be distributed to the localities on a population basis. According to a newspaper article, Dr. Richard McCullock Taliaferro was the school commissioner for Franklin County in 1836. He later became a member of the legislature (1847-1848). A.J. Morrison, in *The Beginnings of Public Education in Virginia, 1776-1860,* says that Franklin County reported a system of free public schools in 1832 established under the Act of 1829.

Dr. Taliaferro built the Hale House on Main Street in Rocky Mount. He moved there from what was later known as the Nelson House (located on the site of Franklin Memorial Hospital), which he converted into a school. This school presumably was operated with funds the county received from the Literary Fund, and it also, most likely, accepted some students on a tuition basis.

The "old field" schools originated prior to 1870 and were so named because they were located in open fields and were improvised buildings or hastily erected, usually of log construction and inexpensive. They were intended primarily for children of parents unable to employ a private tutor, though not limited to the poor alone. Local ministers, in many cases, were the teachers. Sometimes there was another person in the community who had some education and was deemed qualified to teach young children.

As has been noted, private schools were being established, which continued to operate after 1870 and in some cases into the twentieth century. Many of the leading citizens of this period received their training in "old field," private, and church schools.

Mrs. Lucy Wade operated a private school in her home in the early 1900s. Later the school met in a building in her yard. Mrs. Wade taught in the public schools some of the time this school was in operation, with the schedules arranged at times that would not conflict with the public school. There are persons now living who received their education from this private school.

A Public School System Initiated 1870-1900

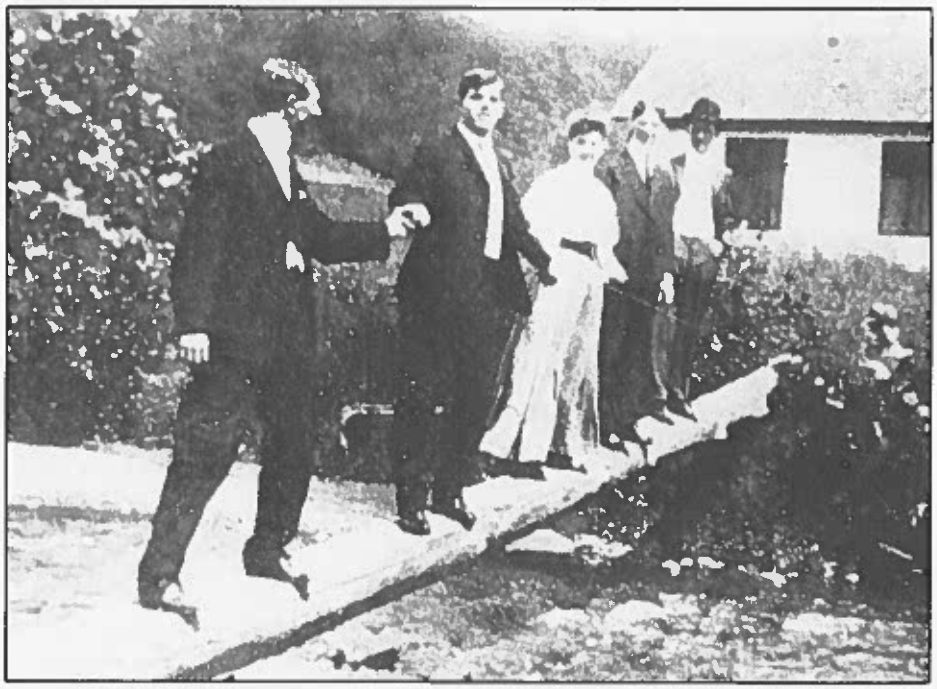
It was not until the Constitutional Convention of 1867-1868 that Virginia made provision for a statewide system of public schools. This constitution (known as the Underwood Constitution) was proposed as a prerequisite for Virginia to re-enter the Union. It was adopted by a statewide vote of 210,585 to 9,136. But although adopted by a substantial majority under the impact of the Reconstruction era, it apparently carried with it no popular enthusiasm and little real approval, as expressed by J.L.B. Buck in *The Development of Public Education in Virginia.*

The first superintendent of schools for Franklin County was Thomas H. Bernard. Mr. Bernard lived in a house located just east of Rocky Mount. He was later judge of the county court. The first recorded meeting of the County Board of School Trustees occurred at the courthouse at Rocky Mount on May 6, 1872. The district boards, which were composed of three persons from the magisterial district, had no doubt met prior to this date. The superintendent also served as president of the County Board of School Trustees, and Superintendent Bernard therefore presided at this first meeting.

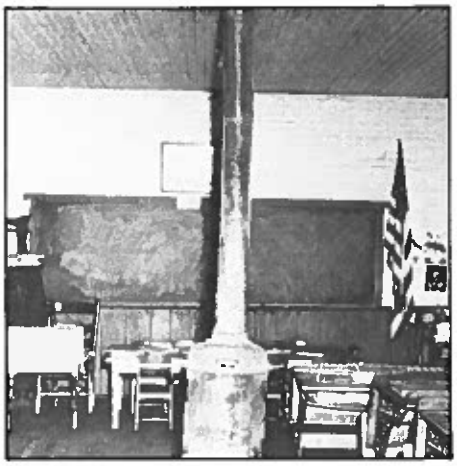
Mr. Bernard had served as superintendent for a period of two years from July 1, 1870, to the summer of 1872. During this period schools were established at Rocky Mount, Halesford, Gogginsville, near Callaway, and at many other points in the county. It was a period during which school trustees (three from each district) were being recruited and the organization of the County Board of Trustees effected. Thus when William A. Griffith became superintendent in the summer of 1872, he found the county board already functioning.

On August 4, 1876, the board recommended that the district boards decide on the location of neighborhood schools and ask the community to raise one-half of the cost. If a community refused, the school should be located in a neighborhood that would raise this amount.

In 1876 when Professor William E. Duncan became superintendent, the county for the first time had a professional educator to head the school system. After the war Superintendent Duncan, an officer in the Confederate army, had established a private school at Halesford, known as Halesford Academy. He and his wife had opened



Early school with foot log crossing Maggodee Ceek near the John Bernard home.



Interior of Naff's School in 1940's located in Naff community.

this school prior to the time he became superintendent, and they continued to operate it for many years afterward.

Dr. Bruce A. James became superintendent of schools in 1881 and served to 1885 when Professor Duncan again became superintendent, serving until 1889. During Dr. James's administration Rocky Mount District was divided; the town became one district and the rest of the magisterial district the other, known as Franklin District.

The early years of the public school were a period of trial and error, exploring untried fields and attempting to establish a system of county-wide schools. When Superintendent Bernard had been appointed he undertook the task of organizing district boards in each of the magisterial districts. The law provided for a board of three members in each district. The superintendent had to take the initiative, by finding suitable men who would serve and having them appointed by the State Board of Education, then later by a local board of reference. Mr. Bernard was successful in getting many leading citizens of the county to serve on these boards. Superintendent Griffith was aggressive in his espousal of the school system and spent much time trying to sell the idea of public free schools to the people.

Professor Duncan lent an air of professionalism to the system. He held many teachers' institutes, encouraged teachers to attend summer normal schools, and initiated a plan for grading teachers according to certification.

R.S. Brown, who gave his address as Dickerson, became acting superintendent in 1889. He worked to establish additional schools in neighborhoods that had not done so; also he promoted the idea of establishing graded schools, though little progress was made in this area for the next several years.

W.O. Frith served as superintendent from 1884 to 1901, except for a year or two when R.S. Brown was acting Superintendent. Superintendent Frith was an energetic leader and encouraged the board to move ahead and seek actively more local support for schools.

At the time that H.D. Dillard became Superintendent of Schools in 1901, he was a practicing attorney in Rocky Mount and had an office near the courthouse. In 1905 he sponsored the first complete census taken of children of school-age.

In 1910 the board outlined the deplorable condition of the county's school buildings and asked the Board of Supervisors to raise the levy to twenty-five cents in order to provide funds for new buildings. Superintendent Dillard, during his term of office of about thirteen years, had many new schools erected, and some one-room schools consolidated into graded schools. During his term also Rocky Mount High School was built. This was an eight-room brick building located at the west end of College Street. This building housed grades one through eleven. It was the first school building in the county to have central heating and indoor plumbing. This structure was used as a school until destroyed by fire in 1944.

W.D. Rucker held the office of superintendent for about three years prior to 1917 and then was acting superintendent for a year or so while his successor, R.A. Prillaman served in the military.

R.A. Prillaman became superintendent of schools in July 1917, but soon thereafter entered military service and served overseas with the U.S. Army during and following World War I. He resumed his duties as superintendent after his honorable discharge from the army in July 1919.

Superintendent Prillaman planned for an expanded school program, necessitating the construction of new buildings. A school for Negroes was envisioned to accommodate the old school known as Booker T. Washington School, which was owned and operated for many years by the Pigg River Baptist Association. Rocky Mount High School was financed by a Literary Fund loan and a bond issue in the town of Rocky Mount. This was the only building in the county at that date to be financed in any part by a local bond issue.

In 1922 the Virginia legislature enacted the County Unit Act, which abolished the district boards and authorized a county school board with a member from each magisterial district to make up the board and be responsible for operating the schools.

On August 1, 1927, Harold W. Ramsey became superintendent of schools for Franklin County. He served in this capacity until July 1, 1968.

In February 1944 fire destroyed the Rocky Mount Elementary School and the children were transferred to the Methodist church. At this time, the board decided to use monies received from the fire insurance to purchase the Nelson House (where the hospital now stands) for a temporary elementary school and to use the remainder of these funds to purchase a site for a new county-wide high school. The members of the County School Board agonized over the preliminary planning and the construction of the Franklin County High School as a consolidated high school for the entire county.

Ten years later the new school had become badly overcrowded, and after much discussion a compromise was effected whereby one junior high school for grades eight and nine was to be built on the same site as the existing high school.

This major consolidation of the county's high school programs and the subsequent creation of an eighth and ninth grade junior high school, Franklin County Junior High School, were among the most far-reaching accomplishments of Dr. Harold Ramsey's tenure.

C.I. Dillon, Jr. became superintendent of schools in July 1968, and on June 16, 1975, the County Board of Supervisors approved a request from the School Board for the construction of a middle school to be located near Rocky Mount to accommodate grades seven and eight from the entire county. With an increased supervisory staff, special education teachers in elementary schools and the Center for Continuing Education provide opportunities for the handicapped and retarded, as well as classes for adult education. In the high school more courses were added and all of the courses available for every student have been enriched. A significant number of new elementary schools, additions to and renovations of existing structures, and ultimately a new stadium facility formed the hallmark of Superintendent Dillon's term of office.

On November 1, 1984, Leonard A. Gereau was appointed superintendent. A major thrust of his administration to date has been the development of greater public participation in the educational process. As this brief account of the history of education in our community is being written, a new grade structure for the division has been proposed and would include a new middle school facility providing for a total structure of kindergarten through fifth grade, sixth through eight grade, and ninth through twelfth grade in the county.

Excerpted and edited from the writings of the late Dr. Harold W. Ramsey. □

DOCTOR HAROLD W. RAMSEY, *a native of Franklin County, served as superintendent of schools, 1927-1968, a member of the Virginia Board of Education, and on the board of visitors of the College of William and Mary in Virginia. Because of the high esteem accorded him by his native county, the main building of Franklin County High School has been named Ramsey Hall. The substance of this article was written by the late Doctor Ramsey while serving as superintendent of schools.*

MORRIS LAW, *associate superintendent, Franklin County Public Schools, and a native of Franklin County, has served as teacher, first principal of Franklin County Junior High School, and supervisor of secondary education. Mr. Law has kindly edited and updated this article for publication.*

Black Schools

Gloria Woods and Mary Hopkins

The introduction of schools for Franklin County blacks was made by First Lieutenant William F. DeKnight, who had been sent to the county on August 17, 1866, by the Freedmen's Bureau. Established on March 3, 1865, the bureau was created to provide assistance to the freedmen in adjusting to their newfound freedom and the obligations of citizenship.

In a report dated October 15, 1866, DeKnight stated that a series of meetings had been held and that a monthly sum of $20.00 could be realized by subscription among the blacks. This money would go toward defraying the minor expenses of schools.

In December 1866, J.P. Wade (white) offered to sell a parcel of land west of Gogginsville to the United States for a school. Upon learning this, Mrs. Peggy Atkins (white), the previous landowner, refused to accept an indebtedness of $50.00 from Wade, thus nullifying his attempt to obtain a clear title.

A second attempt to provide land for a schoolhouse was made by a black woman. The land she was to make available had no liens, but the offer did not prove worthy. General Schofield, assistant commander wrote to R.M. Manley, superintendent of education "that money could not be appropriated for school houses until the regular maintenance of a school was assumed by responsible parties." DeKnight recorded that "there was a poor chance of ever having any freedmen schools in his District (Franklin County) for there was no white persons who would, and no colored persons who could assume such a responsibility."

Despite the adversities, by August 1867, two black Sabbath schools had been organized in Gogginsville. The blacks' quest for knowledge was further demonstrated by Robert Scott, who made applications to the District of Virginia for a supply of books. The acquisition of books only increased the blacks' desire for a public education for their children.

By 1889, Emma Muse and probably a few other black women and men had been endorsed to teach by the commonwealth of Virginia. These endorsements often meant the teacher was only qualified to teach on a third-grade level. The students, called "scholars," ranged in age from seven to twenty-one. They were housed in old abandoned dwelling houses, churches, and in a few instances, log cabins built by black landowners.

Lewis Tyree built the Double Branch School, which was used until it was destroyed by fire. In 1901 the students took occupancy of the old abandoned Henry Fork School which the whites gave the blacks. The school board commissioned another two-room school which was built on High Street by a group of black men: Lee M. Waid, Henry Smith, Walt Walker, Professor Charlie Bond, and William Bond.

But black institutions of learning were still lacking when the Pigg River Baptist Association, which was organized in 1902, appointed a trustee board to study the situation and draw up plans for rectifying the situation. The efforts of William T. Walker, the Reverend T.W. Brown, Lee M. Waid, Henry Smith, Zack Hopkins, and Mrs. Martha Brown, a teacher in the county, led to the purchase of additional land adjacent to the Rocky Mount School near Bald Knob. A dormitory to house students was proposed. The Pigg River Baptist Association provided summer study for teachers at Chestnut Grove (now Holy Trinity) Baptist Church, while waiting to erect a building.

In early 1915, a twenty-room dormitory had been erected to accommodate faculty and out-of-town students. With this in mind the school's name was changed from Rocky Mount School to Booker T. Washington Franklin Normal and Industrial Academy. The curriculum was raised to the junior high level. In time, the number of faculty members grew, as did the enrollment of pupils. Two early teachers were Bertha Muse and Sally Powell. In 1923, the first graduating class included Eddie Dickerson, Willie Wade, Pearl Harris, Louise Brooks, Flossie Brooks, Pearly Tinsley, and Mildred Tyree.

Morton Hopkins, himself a leader in the Black community, at the cornerstone laying ceremonies at the Lee M. Waid School in 1958.

Around 1926, the Rosenwald Fund provided the financial means for the construction of a four-room building. The school board aided in erecting this building, which was renamed the Franklin County Training School. Several years later, the federal government, under the WPA, built an agriculture building.

In spite of the assumption that all black children were receiving a public education, many were not. There was no school in the Briar Mountain community, and there had not been one for twenty-one years. For three or four years, the Reverend Morton H. Hopkins, a black Baptist minister, made an annual request for a school in that community. The Reverend Hopkins's request was finally granted. In addition, the State Board of Education provided the first bus transportation for black children in 1929. The Reverend Hopkins also initiated the hiring of Mrs. Minnie Hopkins Watson (Moorman) as the first black school supervisor. Mrs. Moorman was hired in September 1929 and remained in that capacity for thirty years.

By 1959 the number of schools had decreased from thirty-two one-room schools to nine one-room schools, one three-room school, and a combination elementary and high school. During this time, additional rooms were added to the latter to provide for the subject requirements of science, typing, physical education, and music. This school was renamed in 1959 for Lee M. Waid, to whom the black community felt recognition was due. Today, this school houses children of all races in kindergarten through third grade. □

GLORIA TYREE WOODS, *a native of Franklin County, is a third-grade teacher at Snow Creek Elementary School.*

MARY GEORGE HOPKINS, *a resident of Franklin County, is vice-president of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission, a member of the Franklin County Historical Society, and librarian at the Franklin County Middle School.*

Old Franklin & Pittsylvania Railroad Is Loving Memory For Many

Ran from Gretna to Rocky Mount for a Half Century

Mrs. Dorothy Cundiff and Mr. A. D. Ramsey

There are many railroad buffs in the county who recall the old Franklin and Pittsylvania Railroad that served central and eastern Franklin County, the northern portion of Pittsylvania County, and the western section of Bedford County from 1878 to 1933. The F&PRR served as a carrier of freight, farm products, mail, and passengers for over a half century running from Elba (Gretna) to Rocky Mount. For the last half of its existence, it operated, as one might say, on pocket change and seldom ever showed a profit.

This story of the F&PRR should serve to refresh the memory for many old-timers in the county who have a fond recollection of the old F&P railroad. It should prove entertaining and informative for the younger generation who probably have never heard about old Fast & Perfect.

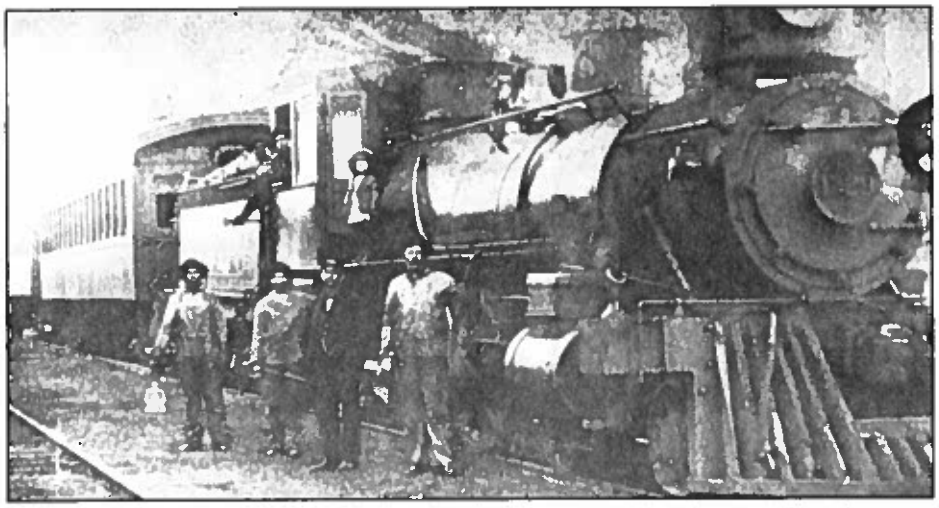
This is the story of a railroad that had its origin some ninety-two years ago and to many is legendary even forty years after the tracks ceased to exist. Sign of the circuitous line from Gretna to Rocky Mount are still visible in the fills and cuts. Most of the stations are still standing and converted into stores, dwellings, or service stations.

Of course F&P stood for Franklin and Pittsylvania Railroad but it was often called Fast and Perfect and it provided laughs for all the years of its life and even to the present time. Many times it really was a "in again, off again, on again, gone again."

Sometimes it spent the day in a cornfield along the roadbed off the track, and it groaned and wheezed many times before it could climb the steep grades on the 35.83-mile run.

The story of the construction of the roadbed from Rocky Mount through the red mud and pine hills of Franklin and Pittsylvania counties to Franklin Junction was one of hard work with a pick and shovel. Chinese and Italian labor is reported as doing part of the work. Perhaps the transient labor presented a problem as has happened so many times in similar cases, but we have no record of any fights or persons injured on the construction. The roadbed extended from Franklin Junction up Hogans Hill, where the grade was so steep that the load always had to be divided with the engine taking part of the load up and coming back for the rest.

One of the cars broke loose one time from the engine coupled to the last half of the train and was not missed until several stations down the track. The long tressle and the dark covered bridge across Pigg River were considered to be outstanding construction in an age without the use of machinery. The roadbed followed the streams for the most part. The dirt road that was built shortly afterwards followed the track and is said to have crossed the tracks thirty-nine times.



Engine and crew of the famous F&P railroad that flourished from 1880 until about 1932. This photo made in 1920. Left to right, brakeman unidentified, Mr. Haskins, Mr. Mayhew (conductor), and Clifton Doss (engineer), M. I. Scruggs is in the cab, fireman unidentified. The little girl is Mr. Haskins' daughter.

One of these writers, A.D. Ramsey, remembers traveling over this road on a wagon and seeing the mud almost touching the horse's stomach in many of the little ravines between the crossings. The present Route 40 is on the exact roadbed of the old F&P in several places.

The F&P didn't begin as a joke. It was supposed to herald the opening of Pittsylvania and Franklin counties. One of the main reasons for the railroad was to haul ore and minerals from the mines at Pittsville to Elba.

In 1877, the Pennsylvania Steel Company purchased iron ore beds in Franklin County while the mines of Pittsville, producing baratese and manganese, were already in operation. John S. Barbour decided to build an eight-mile narrow gauge railroad from Franklin Junction to Pittsville. This section connected with the Lynchburg and Danville division of the Southern Railway. The new railroad fulfilled a dream because the wagons that hauled the ore from the mines were slow and the dirt roads were impassable in the winter months. The iron monsters, as the engines were often called, could haul many times more than the mule trains and in just a fraction of the time. This meant much to the economy of the mining areas.

The dream of extending the line from Pittsville to Rocky Mount linking the Southern Railway with the Punkin Vine line of the Norfolk and Western was becoming a reality. This meant much to the economy of Franklin County and it offered transportation for lumber, fertilizer, tobacco, and produce. The roads of the county were very poor and many times impassable and the train was much faster and cheaper.

According to existing records, the Franklin and Pittsylvania Railroad was chartered on or about March 12, 1878. The railroad was a joint venture with Franklin County citizens voting a bond issue for $200,000 and the Southern Railway, Virginia Midland and Washington City chipping in another $100,000. Thus the railroad from the Norfolk and Western was linked with the Southern at Gretna.

A lease was made between F&P and Southern for thirty-four years. The agreement held for the entire thirty-four years and Franklin County's bond issue was paid off. The Southern had tried to give the property to the county in 1894 but Franklin County was too smart. The county got a permanent injunction requiring the Southern to operate the train until the end of the lease.

The first engine was a wood burner and every few miles the train was compelled to stop and load wood. Later, enough wood to make about one-half of the trip could be stored on the tender. Farmers along the

right-of-way cut the wood and stacked it in piles, which also boosted the economy. The conductor signed a receipt and this was paid from the Rocky Mount office. The receipt was good for about $3. During May 1880, the first train composed of freight cars, express cars, passenger coach, and a mail car made its maiden trip.

The engine, called Captain C.W.B. Hale after a local Confederate veteran, made the first trip in about four hours. Hale also operated the Jubal A. Early house at Rocky Mount.

Chris Hecker was the first engineer with John Adkins succeeding him. It is interesting to know that the engineer was paid $3 per day, the conductor and fireman were paid $2, while the brakeman received $1 per day. The narrow gauge made quite a problem as all trucks under the freight cars had to be changed at Gretna. This problem lasted until 1886 when the Richmond and Danville Railroad took over the property of the Virginia Midland, which included the F&P.

The new operators changed the narrow gauge to standard gauge tracks. Someone laughingly said, "It didn't change the gauge on the profits."

The new operators also put on coal burners, instead of wood. This disrupted the local economy as farmers along the track had been making good money selling wood. The addition of the coal-burning locomotive boosted the economy of some people. It is reported that one person stated "My brother and I used to run along the tracks picking up coal as it fell off the train and then we sold it to blacksmiths for fuel. We received about 10 cents fo a small bag."

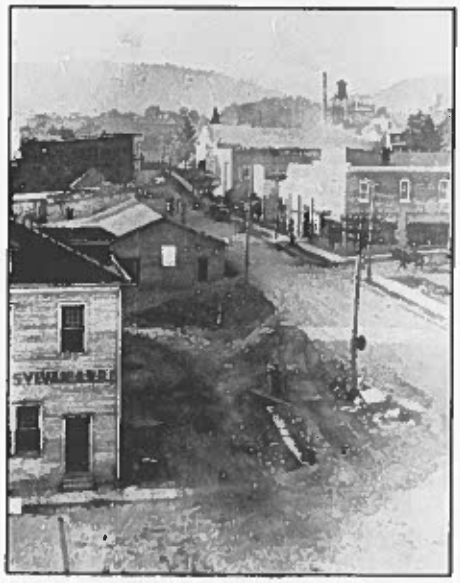
When the Southern realized it had to keep the F&P for the term of the lease, it tried to run the line like a big time operation. Nine stations were constructed between 1900 and 1910 and they proved to be adequate for freight storage and comfortable for the passengers and for agents working in the stations.

The Southern Railway constructed a string of nine stout heart pine stations. Each station had separate waiting rooms for white and black, mail room, express depot, and ticket office.

Time has made many changes. The bustling community center stations have all but disappeared. Sandy Level remains about the same as it was when constructed except that it has faded from the struggle with the elements and is surrounded by vines and forest. All the businessess have moved up to the highway (40). Union Hall is perhaps the best preserved of the two remaining stations. It was a very important station on the railway, and today is the home of Harry Robertson's Grocery, facing Route 40. Except for a stock of groceries and merchandise, it has remained about the same in external appearance.

The station at Gretna (Franklin Junction) is about the same as originally except for renovation and modernization. The Franklin and Pittsylvania Railroad unloaded on the opposite side of the station from the Southern line as it stands today. The area where the fill and track stood serves as a parking area now.

Sometimes the brakes failed on the train and on one such brake failure day, the train ran off the fill onto the ground. A drummer (traveling salesman) on the train that day dryly remarked that he liked the town very much but the train had a very poor way of unloading passengers.



Depot Street (Franklin Street) as it appeared in the early twentieth century. Note the depot of the F&P Railroad standing near the Rocky Mount Coal Company today.

The station at Pittsville was torn down several years ago and the site is now a part of the D.W. Hunt general store in Pittsylvania. This little village was the junction point for the ore mines.

The depot at Toshe's was torn down years ago. The exact location has also disappeared.

Ajax, in Pittsylvania County, used the store and dwelling of J.L. Yeatts as a flag stop. A wooden arm extended out and caught the mail when the train had no passengers or freight for that place. Arvie Yeatts (now deceased) was playing on the track near Ajax one day and the Reverend A.F. Ramsey (the Christian church preacher) pulled him off the tracks and saved his life as the train came around a curve and did not have time to stop.

Angle Siding was a whistle stop and it served a large area. The writer (A.D. Ramsey) flagged the old train several times and listened to the two blasts from the oncoming engine to indicate the intention of stopping. The deep wooded area surrounding the siding afforded a place to tie the horses at a safe distance. Someone once said a young man was trying hard to control his struggling team and a stranger offered to help. "Yes you can help, hold pa," was the quick response.

The Penhook Station served as a dwelling for several years after the trains stopped. Only a year or so ago it was torn down and a trailer home and the brick service station replaced it. Some of the building material has been used in a woodwork shop belonging to Arnette Gourley. It was here that the narrow gauge railroad belonging to Saunders and Meyers brought slaves and lumber from the Moneta area of Bedford County. The track was narrow gauge and was run on wooden rails from the Penhook University (an old one-room school) to the station. The rest of the road used steel rails. One of the highlights of the early days was unloading the engine and hauling it across Smith Mountain and to the dinky track near Penhook. The event provided a holiday as everyone for miles came bringing teams, wagons, slides, or whatever they had to help carry the engine across the mountain. (We were unable to find out why they never hauled the engine on to Penhook and unloaded there. Some out-of-state visitors have since come to Penhook looking for Penhook University. Vernon Davis perhaps is responsible for giving the university its name.)

Novelty was a flagstop near Penhook on the way to Union Hall. It was used as a siding and passenger flag stop.

Perhaps one of the worst wrecks on the F&P line occurred at Mattocks curve near the cemetery. The wreck occurred one cold winter evening about dusk. The stoves and lights added much to the confusion as the train left the rails and turned over. Altogether one was killed, several were burned and bruised, and some received permanent injury. The Dr. G.O. Giles home a few miles away became the emergency hospital. Some said everyone was covered with smoke and soot as well as bruised and bleeding. One man was running up and down the roadway screaming, "My legs are broken!" (According to the good doctor one patient was treated with a paste of flour over his face to stop bleeding.)

Perhaps it was at this place that the engine turned over some logs and the same logs saved the engineer's life. (Just a few days earlier he had bawled out the section foreman for leaving the logs on the right-of-way.) Some looting was reported; one man had his handkerchief full of sugar and a lady had sugar in her apron also.

The Glade Hill station has been converted into a home (across the road beside Glade Hill Garage) and is currently in use. Signs of the old railroad may be seen at the Glade Hill Elementary School. The roadbed crossed just in front of the building and the

One of the many derailments experienced by the ill fated F&P during its "on again, off again" existence.

cut is visible at the edge of the woods along the tobacco field.

The station at Redwood east of Pasley Grocery, has been converted into a dwelling. The outline of the station may still be seen on the side of the building next to the store.

The old railroad crossed the N&W tracks and came into Rocky Mount by Lane's Veneering and Ideal Lumber and crossed the N&W just to the south of the present station. The turntable (for turning the engine around) was located near where the Brown's Insurance and Rocky Mount Coal Company is currently located.

It is reported that all Norfolk and Western trains had to stop at the crossing near the still-standing depot as the Franklin and Pittsylvania owned the right-of-way.

The Southern Railway tried to make a big-time railroad out of the Franklin and Pittsylvania but somehow it was just not in the stars for the railroad to be a big-timer. Times were changing, roads became more than paths, there were better wagons, rubber tire buggies were introduced, and the motor car was just appearing. The track and equipment of the railroad were wearing out and travelers and freight diminishing. When the end of the lease came in 1914, it was a real pleasure for the Southern to kiss the F&P goodbye and give it back to the counties of Franklin and Pittsylvania. (It is reported that the Southern even painted and cleaned all the equipment to make the deal look better.)

The nonprofit Jonah was back again in the fold of the founders - many years later and very near worn out. For seven long years struggling under the leadership of R.E. Ferguson, Frank Laprade, Nat Angle, Charlie Bennett, and Charlie Davis, the company continued to decline.

Sand and clay roads were being constructed and the times were changing. All these changes contributed to the bankruptcy of the F&P in 1921. Chapman Dudley was appointed as receiver and operated the railroad for one year and, believe it or not the railroad showed a profit of $928. When Dudley was asked how long it took the train to make a run, he repled, "That depends on how many times the train gets off the track." The railroad became known as the "on again and off again" railroad.

Franklin & Pittsylvania Railroad

A. M. Heckle, Superintendent
Rocky Mount, Va.

Time Table No. 8 will provide for the following service:

No. 9				No. 10
A.M.				P.M
Lv. 7:05	0	.....	Gretna, Va.....	Ar. 2:15
f	3	.....	Farmer, Va	f
" 7:45	7	...	Pittsville, Va.	" 1:50
" 7:58	9	.....	Toshes, Va.....	" 1:35
" 8:18	12	.	Sandy Level, Va. .	" 1:15
f	16	.....	Angle, Va.	f
" 8:45	18	....	Penhook, Va.....	" 11:55
f	20	....	Novelty, Va.....	f
" 9:05	23	..	Union Hall, Va...	" 12:30
" 9:28	27	....	Glade Hill, Va....	" 12:10
" 9:43	32	...	Redwood, Va.	" 11:50
Ar. 10:00	37	.	Rocky Mount, Va .	Lv 11:30

Trains 9 and 10 will operate Daily except Sunday. Trains 136 and 137 abolished.
This schedule is published for the information of the public, and the time and connections shown are not guaranteed.

Franklin & Pittsylvania schedule appearing in the Franklin Chronicle, 1915.

Many stories are told about the trying years. A local minister walked to the Y near Penhook to see where the engine could turn around and as he was returning to the village the train came puffing up. The engineer stopped the train and politely asked if he wanted to ride. The minister thanked him but refused saying, "I am in a hurry today, maybe some other time."

Perhaps the railroad holds the official record for fewest fatalities for the time it operated, chugging up and down hills and across wobbly trestles on a track that was seldom in first class shape. The only explanation for the lack of many fatalities must be to the fact that the train seldom could attain the speed that could make for an accident fatal.

We can find records of only a few deaths. Frank Haley slipped and fell under the train at Glade Hill and before anyone could stop the train he was crushed under the wheels. Nathan Rucker, a conductor, went between the cars to insert a coupling and someone accidently reversed the engine, killing him. This accident is reported to have happened at Pittsville. Ed Shelton died in an engine mishap. Lem Carter was struck when the train passed under the tank near Pigg River Bridge and he was knocked off the train.

Several near deaths were reported of accidents and wrecks of the train. The worst wreck was on Mattox Curve. Clifton Doss, an engineer, is reported to have escaped scalding to death by one minute as the engine turned over. Several who were injured carried their wounds to their graves.

In 1922, Chapman Dudley sold the railroad to N.P. Angle for $6,000. Angle, a leading citizen of Franklin County and a Rocky Mount businessman, felt that to lose the railroad would be a step backward for the county and the town of Rocky Mount. Ten years later that backward step looked good to him as he had lost $2,569, so 1932 was the final year of the F&P.

The last few years were hard. The tracks all but held the rails. Freight moved slowly and sometimes only once a week. It is reported that the last train trip from Pittsville to Gretna took eight hours and covered a distance of only eight miles. □

A. D. RAMSEY and DOROTHY R. CUNDIFF *are natives of Franklin County and decendants of Thomas Ramsey, an early settler of Franklin County. Mr. Ramsey is a retired farmer and teacher, having served as principal of Glade Hill High School and a teacher of agriculture. He has maintained an active interest in local history and has for may years chronicled both oral history and his own reminiscences. His daughter, Mrs. Dorothy R. Rundiff, serves as managing director of the Franklin County Merchants and Businessmen's Association. Mrs. Cundiff is well known for her photographs of Franklin County. Mrs. Cundiff is a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

Reflections on the Origin of Ferrum College

Frank Hurt, H.D.

The resolve to meet the need for Christian education in the southern highlands of Franklin and the adjoining counties of Virginia originated with dedicated members of the Virginia Methodist Woman's Home Missionary Society. Meeting in Richmond in 1909 they agreed to build a school for the youth of the mountainous area in order to offer "Christian education when all other sources failed." The result was the founding of Ferrum Training School in 1913.

The Virginia Annual Conference organized a board of trustees in the fall of 1913, consisting of ten men chosen by the conference and five women elected by the Woman's Home Missionary Society. Soon thereafter, a committee of four trustees visited and selected Ferrum in Franklin County as the site for the proposed school. "Prompted solely by the desire to extend the kingdom of God on this earth," the founders brooded and prayed over a venture in faith that was to have a great influence on the lives of those who would attend the new school. The board selected as the new president Dr. Benjamin Moore Beckham, a Scholar of Latin and Greek, minister, and former presiding elder of the Danville District of the Virginia Annual Conference. The first school session opened on September 15, 1914.

The modest beginning of the school did not impair its commitment to educating seekers of truth and strength of character. Beginning with an enrollment of ninety students and a faculty of six, the school set out on a hopeful journey. Although the total expense of boarding and day students was fixed at an economical level, funds had to be obtained for those unable to meet the tuition. Scholarships were provided through solicitation and generous gifts that lent strength and substance to an uncommon challenge. The latent ability of the underprivileged student given such encouragement, broke forth to fulfill the promise of the motto, "Not Self But Others."

From the beginning Ferrum had been an elementary school and four-year academy. Realizing, however, that its program could not vitally touch the children of pre-high school age in the outlying highlands, the people of the remote parts of Franklin, Floyd, Patrick, and Madison counties, with Ferrum's assistance, cooperation, and planning, undertook to construct branch schools. The board of trustees acted quickly to meet what was regarded as a continuing challenge. In any attempt to evaluate the work of these branch schools, it is difficult to determine how many young people were awakened and helped. Many of them came to Ferrum to continue their education. While the number of students at Ferrum proper grew from the original 90 in 1914, the total, including the mission schools, reached 750 by 1925.

While Ferrum labored under great difficulty, its excellent leadership yielded large returns. The success of its efforts were measured by the quality of its product, namely, its mental caliber, moral tone, and life purposes. Beginning in 1917, there were 143 graduates over the next eight years. Most of them continued their education by entering higher institutions of learning. With its accreditation and rank, Ferrum found its graduates entered unconditionally any college or university in the nation.

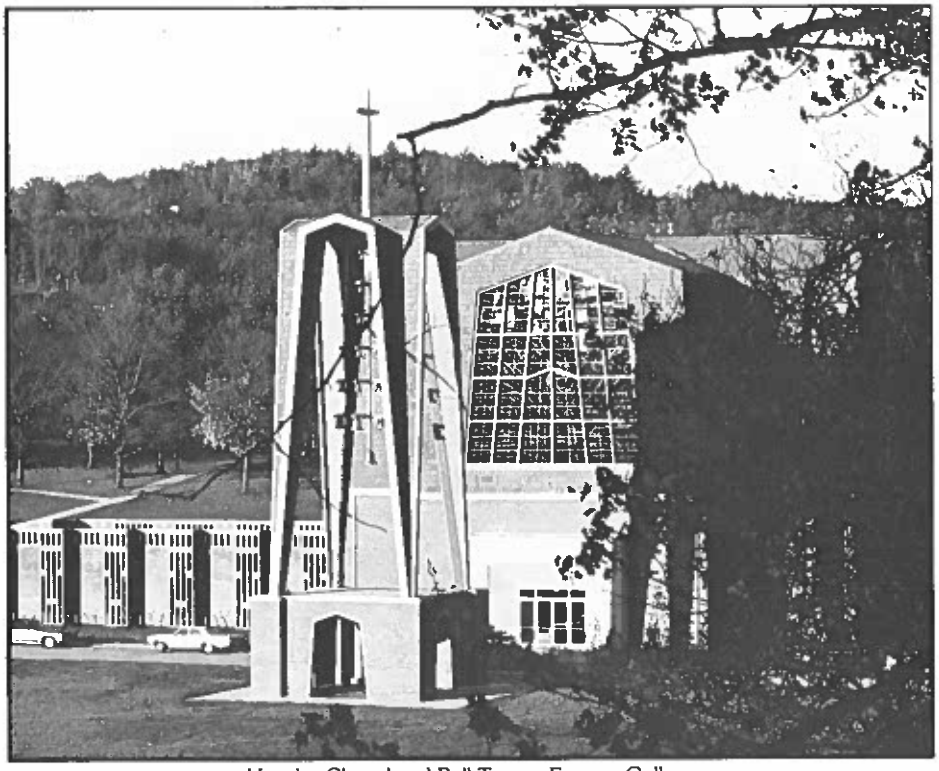
With the growth of public elementary and high schools in Virginia, Ferrum's board of trustees was prompted to consider taking another step forward. Heretofore, the state had left to the church a large responsibility for providing both elementary and advanced education. When the state took over elementary and secondary education, the church found it necessary to search for challenges at a higher level. In its spring meeting on April 14, 1926, the board of trustees voted to change Ferrum Training School into a junior college and to add a year of college work to the course of study on a one-year trial basis. Should the experiment prove successful academically and financially, a decision could be reached later to increase the offerings by the addition of another year.

Faced with difficulties over which Ferrum had little control, the prospect of gaining accreditation as a junior college did not appear promising. The school had been shaken by the buffeting and knocks of the depression years. Retiring on October 18, 1933, Dr. Beckham did not remain to witness the culmination of the venture into higher education. But his stalwart example, ideals, dedication to purpose, scholarly ability, and leadership had a lasting effect on those who came under his dedicated leadership and influence.

Realizing that Ferrum's future rested on strengthening the junior college work, Dr. James Archer Chapman, who became president on October 20, 1935, set about restructuring the program. His success was applauded at a session of the Virginia Annual Conference held in Richmond in October, 1939. The conference's Board of Missions and Church Extension commended the progress that Ferrum had made by adapting itself to changing conditions and strengthening the work of the junior college.

In time, however, Ferrum's leaders had to decide whether or not the college's future could be met with traditional conviction and purpose. Realizing that the time called for clear thinking and courageous action, the board of trustees selected a new president, the Reverend Mr. C. Ralph Arthur. He had been president and executive secretary of the Commission of Town and Country Work of the Virginia Annual Conference from 1951 to 1954. His appointment came at a time of much prosperity in the nation, and innovative programs could offer a timely opportunity for the advancement of educa-

View of Ferrum College Campus c. 1930.



Vaughn Chapel and Bell Tower, Ferrum College

tional challenges. Private institutions, particularly church-related ones like Ferrum, appealed to the generosity of charitable and political organizations to provide the means for underwriting their programs. Dr. Arthur set about his work with great faith and a never-wavering spirit.

Progress under his leadership proved to be substantial, even phenomenal. With success attendant upon a program of fund raising and expansion, he raised Ferrum to an incredible level, not only in the area of physical goals, but as the catalyst for the growth of Ferrum's student body from 350 to 1,200, while strengthening the faculty and academic curriculum, and enlarging the endowment. His untimely death on October 14, 1970, brought to an end the career of a fine leader whose dedication, vision, and tireless efforts had helped to bring about a rebirth of Ferrum at a critical time in its history.

During the 1970s and into the 1980s, Ferrum under the leadership of Dr. Joseph T. Hart, has continued its development and dedication as a viable and expanding institution of higher learning. He has explained that his interest in such an institution stems from his conviction that "the most difficult and pressing problems in society today lie in the area of human relations" of which "church-related institutions of higher education have an integral and significant role to play in mitigating these problems." With a faculty of 97 and a student body of 1,300, Ferrum's reputation and qualitative development have been the result of planning new programs "designed to changing educational patterns and expectations."

The Senior College in Human Services was begun in 1974 by offering degrees in human service areas. A step forward was made in December 1976 when the college was awarded accreditation as a four-year institution by the Southern Association of Colleges and Schools. The organization of the Blue Ridge Institute in 1973 as a part of Ferrum College's interest in preserving the culture of the Blue Ridge area provided opportunities for continuing education and community challenges. "The primarily residential faculty, staff and student body at Ferrum afford (continuing) opportunities for diversified learning experiences and interaction."

Although it has been a difficult task to recapture those qualities that entered into the founding of Ferrum and its fine accomplishments, there emerges the conviction that there was something in the dedication and purpose of the founders and leaders that illuminated the minds and souls of those who were nurtured by its challenges. Recognition and respect mark the enviable paths of those Christian leaders who sought to establish "the delicate equilibrium between dream and reality." Pericles observed in a fitting metaphor: "There dwells an unwritten memorial to them, graven not in stone, but in the hearts of men." □

FRANK B. HURT, H.D., *a native of Ferrum, has retired and returned to Ferrum College after a distinguished career in education. He served as associate professor of political science at Western Maryland College from 1930 to 1965 when he was named professor emeritus and as lecturer at University College, University of Maryland. He returned to Ferrum College in 1965 to head the division of Social Sciences and there was elected professor emeritus in 1970. He is the author of* A History of Ferrum College *and* The Heritage of the German Element in Franklin County, Virginia, *in the Eighteenth Century, a member of the Franklin County Historical Society (president, 1969-1970), and a member of the Franklin County Bicentennail Commission.*

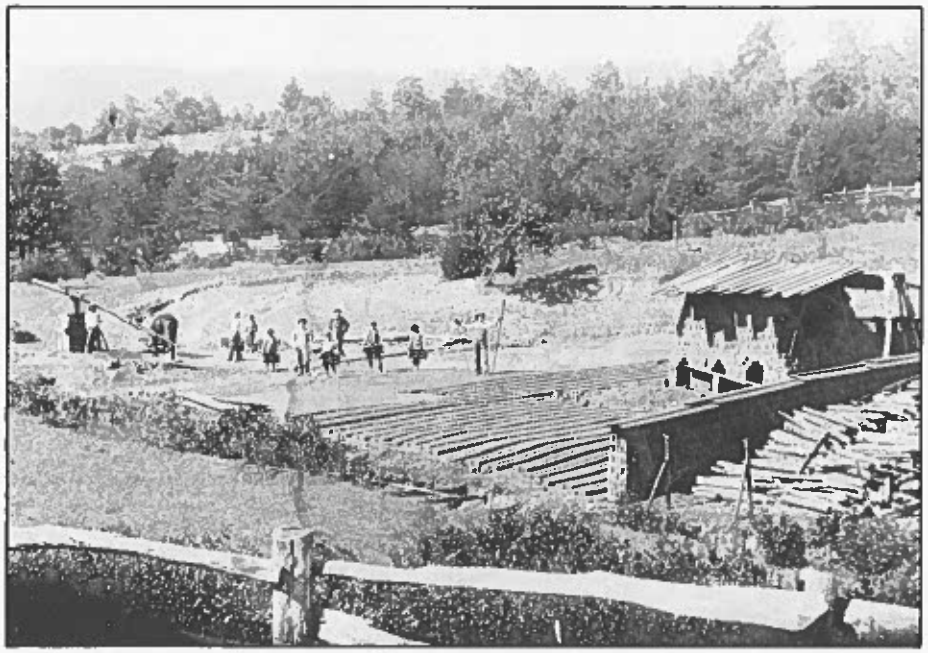
Industry in Franklin County 1900 - 1940

Henry Hopkins

When the 1880 census of the United States was taken, the Franklin and Pittsylvania Railroad was being completed, tobacco factories were in operation, and mining for iron ore was in progress near Rocky Mount. Over one hundred sixty-five people were employed in these industries; 72 percent of those employed were black.

By 1900, Franklin County had two railroads, the Southern Railway (Franklin and Pittsylvania) and the Norfolk and Western, but no county residents were railroad construction employees or tobacco factory employees and the only two iron miners probably worked in the Patrick County iron mines at Fayersdale. There were stave mills, producing staves for wooden barrels, at Henry, Ferrum, and Rocky Mount. The population of Rocky Mount had grown from 315 in 1880 to 613 in 1900. Nathaniel P. Angle had a stave mill on the northwest border of Rocky Mount. He had already become successful as a merchant. John R. Robinson, who was in charge of the Rocky Mount stave mill, made some quality cabinets, which encouraged the idea that maybe a furniture manufacturing plant would be a profitable venture. In 1903, the charter of Bald Knob Furniture Company was registered in the County Clerk's Office. The company's stock at $100 a share was to be capitalized at a maximum of $50,000 and a minimum of $25,000. Nat Angle became its first president. Also in that same year, the State Corporation Commission incorporated the Bassett Furniture Company, of Henry County, but it was not until 1907 that the SCC did the same for the Bald Knob Furniture Company. By 1910, Bald Knob employed over sixty-five workers and furnished electricity to the town of Rocky Mount.

Blacks did not take part in the new industry. They did show their abilities as blacksmiths, brick masons, plasterers, painters, and barbers. Filmore Brooks had a livery stable on East Court Street and also started Brooks Grocery Store, which was bought by his two clerks, Sam Phelps and Lee M. Waid. For over two decades, Brooks Grocery was regarded by many of the town's residents as having the best delivery service and being the town's best-stocked grocery. Ollie Hopkins ran a successful restaurant, which the country people thought had the best "eaten" in town. Joseph N. Montgomery, a white, hired mostly blacks to work in his sheet metal business on Floyd and Main, making buckets, tubs, and other metal items. Like some whites, many blacks turned to the coal fields for employment but still called Franklin County their place of residence.



Brickyards were essential for construction and several were known to have been located in or near Rocky Mount. This brickyard in Rocky Mount (note Grassy Hill in the background) shows all phases of brickmaking: gathering clay, the pug mill for mixing, molding bricks, sun drying bricks and kiln baking bricks. At least one brickyard was located near here North of the courthouse before 1850.

Probably the first manufacturing of wearing apparel was begun by Joseph N. Montgomery in 1913 under the name of Rocky Mount Overall Company, which lasted until 1922, when it was incorporated as the Black Prince Overall Company and located on Main Street almost directly across from the courthouse. The new president was J. R. Muse, of Danville, with Joseph N. Montgomery as vice-president, and J. O. Martin as secretary-treasurer. In 1926, fire destroyed the building and the operation was moved to the auditorium located on Oak Street.

In the early 1900s, a Mr. Byrd, of Glade Hill, manufactured and sold a salve that he called Byrd's Oriental Balm. It must have been popular in the county for in 1917 W. Crump Menefee, R. L. McNeil, W. R. Davis, and Archie Adams organized the Blue Ridge Chemical Company primarily to manufacture and sell Byrd's Oriental Balm and secondarily soap, salve, vinegar, syrup, extracts of all kinds, and other medicines. The company was authorized to be capitalized at a maximum of $150,000 at $10 a share. A few years later, J. Kyle Montague Medicine Company was chartered with a maximum capitalization of $100,000 and a minimum of $25,000. The officers were: Nat Angle, president; J. Kyle Montague, of Roanoke, vice-president; and C. J. Davis, treasurer. The purpose of the company was to manufacture and sell both wholesale and retail the J. Kyle Montague and Sons line of medicines and remedies known as Montague Liniment, Horse and Cattle Powder, Poultry Powder, Liver and Kidney Pills, among others. Byrd's Oriental Balm was manufactured in the same building as Black Prince Overalls, while Montague's Liniment was manufactured in a two-story frame building at the bottom of Scott Hill.

Rocky Mount did not become the great pharmaceutical manufacturing center that the entrepreneurs hoped it would. Even though Byrd's Oriental Balm was good for poison oak and "Monague" Liniment was also good, the original backers' enthusiasm died when the Black Prince Overall Company was destroyed by fire in 1926. Later Zack Perdue manufactured Byrd's Oriental Balm Company and sold it. The "Monague" line was moved to the second floor and forgotten when the Kendrick Broom Company moved into the frame building.

In 1919, "the pause that refreshes," Coca Cola, was bottled for a while in a building on North Franklin Street. The Menefee brothers (Harry, Moton, and Crump) were partners in the franchise. Later they moved the bottling works to a brick building on Franklin Street and Floyd Avenue. In 1945 the bottling company closed.

The organized mining of mica, talc, and soapstone in Franklin County also began in the twentieth century. By about 1914, the Henry Mining Company in Henry was in operation producing hot plates for fireless cookers, soapstone griddles, soapstone foot warmers, and small electrical insulator units. About 1916, the Franklin Soapstone Products Corporation took over Henry Mining Company and began specializing in pulverizing soapstone. Soon thereafter the plant ceased operations until 1920 when the Blue Ridge Talc Company purchased it. Besides grinding soapstone, the company began processing natural earth pigments for coloring mortar, cement, and paints. By 1976, Blue Ridge Talc was manufacturing paints, putty, and caulking, and employed sixty-five people.

In the late 1800s, people living in the Snow Creek area brought large sheets of mica to be sold in Rocky Mount. In 1909, George K. Cooper, who had been working mica deposits on his own land, tried to interest some men from Southwest Virginia in developing mines but they failed to exploit the mines. In 1915, Chestnut Mica Company bought the Cooper's property, mined it for a while, and later sold it to Clinchfield Mica Company of New York. Two other mica companies were organized in Franklin County. The mines stopped operating in 1950. In 1921, Central Mica Company was chartered, but it was dissolved in 1934. In the latter year, the United States Reclaiming Company was chartered in the county. Its purpose was to operate mica mines and reclaim scrap mica and other minerals, but that company was dissolved in 1937.

A flagstone quarry, which is now located in the town of Rocky Mount west of Needmore, furnished stone for sidewalks and stepping stones for crossing the street in the horse and buggy days. Bill Smithers was the last person to quarry the stone there and operations ended sometime in the 1940s.

In 1924, S.R.S. Oil Company was chartered to "buy and sell oil lands, lease and release, save and bore for and pump and market same." S.R.S. Smith of Scruggs, served as president and C. B. Perdue as Secretary-Treasurer. It has been said that some explorations were made on the southwest of Grassy Hill, but no oil was ever pumped.

In 1926, Grassy Hill Furniture Company was founded to manufacture antique reproductions. Its officers were R. L. Kent, president; W. L. Cooper, vice-president; and C. O. Cooper, treasurer. Charlie Hodges proved to be the workman most skilled in making the reproductions. The company's employees also refinished old furniture at this plant located on Franklin Street near High Street.

R. J. Kendrick, who took over broom manufacturing from a Mr. Hall, started the Kendrick Broom Company in 1928. Nat Angle served as its treasurer. The brooms were made on the first floor of the J. Kyle Montague Medicine Company building. Three people made about twenty dozen corn brooms a day. The company closed in 1934 when R. J. Kendrick was drowned.

In 1920, Bald Knob Furniture Company expanded to a capitalization of $250,000. The times were so good for the company during the early twenties that in 1928 plans were made to expand further by building a new factory at the location now owned by Lane Furniture Manufacturing Company. It was to be financed by profits and not by selling stock. The stock market crash came in the fall of 1929 and the depression followed. As a result, Bald Knob Furniture suffered financial difficulties and borrowed $250,000 from the federal government to complete the plant. The old facilities were abandoned. Later Rocky Mount Manufacturing would locate there. The debt was paid back quickly but the people who held preferred stock were not paid a dividend.

At one time, the Bald Knob had 60 salesmen throughout the county. The number of workers peaked at 300 after World War II. They made dining room tables and chairs, bedroom furniture, tables, chests of drawers, and nightstands. A short time after the death of Nat Angle in 1935, his heirs asked James N. Montgomery to be president of the company. Montgomery remained the president until Lane Furniture Manufacturing Company bought Bald Knob in 1957.

On June 27, 1929, Angle Silk Mill was chartered and stock was sold at $100 a share, being capitalized at a $250,000 maximum. The stocks were all subscribed before the stock market crash that fall, so the mill was completed without financial difficulty. Nat Angle, for whom it was named, was president and treasurer, and J. D. Pell was hired to manage the mill. After Nat Angle died, Joe Pell bought the operation. At first the purpose of the mill was to weave materials from silk and rayon to be used later in ladies clothing. After silk was discontinued, other materials were woven. In 1947, another plant was started at Ferum. Twelve years later, both plants were purchased by J. P. Stevens Company.

Near Ferrum in 1937, four men started Ferrum Veneer: Thomas B. Stanley, R. E. Weaver, J. V. Chapman, and J. V. Webb. In 1939, the old Bald Knob plant was occupied by the Rocky Mount Manufacturing Company and the name was changed to R.O.W. (Royal Oak Wholesale) and later to M.W. (Mill Work). Fred P. Vaughan was its president. The factory, popularly known as the Sash Plant, manufactured windows, which by 1976 were distributed over a thirteen-state area. The Weaver Mirror Company, located near the old Bald Knob plant, was started in 1932 by Robert E. Weaver and Avis B. Weaver. This company made mirror-backed fixtures and mirror frames. Recently it moved to the Franklin County Industrial Park.

Boones Mill is another town in the

The Bald Knob Furniture Factory was established in Rocky Mount in 1906 by N.P. Angle. Here workers pose before the plant in its early days of operation.

county where there was some industry. At first using surplus waterpower from a flour mill, as there was no electricity in Boones Mill until 1929, Grover C. Turman, a skilled workman at using the lathe, made locust insulating pins and oak brackets for telegraph and telephone poles. The company Turman founded in 1923 was called the American Pin and Bracket Company. Steam power was used until 1929 to run the plant, which hired as many as fifteen workers. It went out of business in the 1930s when it became difficult to obtain good locust wood.

Later in the 1930s, Homer Murray founded the Novelty Furniture Company. Foot stools were made and shipped to New York City where women covered the tops of the stools with cloth they needlepointed. During World War II, the company had contracts with the British to make brackets for poles and the United States government to make file handles.

The manufacturing businesses herein mentioned and others such as: stave mills, canneries, flour mills, sawmills, railroads, and distilleries were not enough to halt the decrease in county population from 26,480 in 1910 to its lowest point of 24,337 in 1930. Although some increase was seen during the Great Depression, after World War II the population decrease continued until it reached a turning point in the 1960s. By the time of the 1970 census, with 28,136 people counted, the population of Franklin County finally exceeded that of 1910. □

HENRY HOPKINS, *a native of Franklin County and son of the late Judge A.H. Hopkins and Catherine Lee Hopkins, is a dairyman, a past history teacher in the public school system of Franklin County, and an avid researcher and student of local history.*

Industries of Rocky Mount, Franklin County, Virginia - 1940

Essie W. Smith

The most recent census gives the town of Rocky Mount, Virginia, approximately 2500 inhabitants. The town is situated at the junction of highways number 220 and 40, and lies picturesquely on hills surrounded by high elevations. For many years its only connection with the outside world was by stagecoach. Then the Richmond and Danville Railroad extended a narrow gauge from Franklin Junction which terminated here. About 1890 the Winston-Salem division of the Norfolk and Western, or the Roanoke and Southern, as it was then called, was completed. This went directly through the town, and gave another contact with neighboring cities.

The terrible condition of roads in this section impeded traffic to a remarkable degree until the two main highways were completed. In the old days it required about twelve hours to make the trip from Roanoke to Rocky Mount, by carriage or horseback travel. Now the distance is covered in half an hour.

A glimpse at an old newspaper of a century and a quarter ago reveals the following data: "The town of Rocky Mount has about thirty dwelling houses, three stores, two taverns, two tailors, two blacksmiths, a saddler, a cabinet maker, a boot and shoe manufacturer, a printing office, which issues a weekly paper, and a tanyard. In the vicinity there is an iron furnace and forge, employing about one hundred men, and manufacturing about one hundred and sixty tons of bar iron and castings annually. Population (exclusive of furnace operations) one hundred and seventy-five, of whom three are attorneys, and one physician."

The slow growth of the community will be revealed in subsequent statistics. There are now twenty-four stores, including three drug stores, two wholesale stores, and two undertaking establishments which should be designated mortuaries.

Two banks flourish, and are liberally patronized by the surrounding country; an ice plant supplies its necessary commodity to those not owning refrigerators, and a coal yard keeps two trucks busy all winter in an effort to protect the inhabitants from the winds often fresh from the snow banks of the surrounding mountains.

Two newspapers vie in supplying the weekly news of the vicinity and the world; twenty filling stations pump gas for the many cars of the section and the host of travelers who thong the now perfect roads. Four restaurants supplement the one hotel which is quite a summer resort for those acquainted with its advantages of climate and home cooking. A good bakery provides daily products but some people still prefer to patronize the trucks which are constantly supplying the market with different brands.

Five white and two colored churches furnish spiritual nourishment: Baptist, Presbyterian, Episcopal and Holiness are the denominations for white people, while Baptist and Methodist much better attended furnish comfort and refuge for the colored brethren.

There is a large lumber yard owned and operated by a woman who has made a success of the business, situated near the railroad station while a firm engaged in the same occupation has added the manufacture of desks and other household necessities to a large and growing business.

Two shoe menders ply their trades, and two antique dealers display their wares. Five physicians minister to the ailments, and three dentists recondition the teeth of the community. Sixteen teachers instruct daily in the white public school, and seven colored teachers struggle with the problems of their race in their own schools. Twelve lawyers, including the Judge and the Commonwealth Attorney, strive to maintain order and discipline—as well as themselves.

A new door and sash factory which is said to revolutionize the problem of window cleaning by providing removable windows, has been opened and will furnish employment for about fifty men.

A rayon Silk Mill has been more or less successful here for some years. The mill has not always worked full time, but at present is doing very well. They employ about one hundred people, mostly women. The material manufactured here is sometimes very beautiful, and priced so reasonable that nearly all visitors make generous purchases.

At the county courthouse the Treasurer employs three girls in his office. Located in the same building are the offices of the Commonwealth's Attorney, the County Clerk and his deputy, the Sheriff, the Commissioner of the Revenue, and the head of the Welfare department. Each officer has a stenographer. The County Demonstration Agent has his office here, and several girls work there. The Lee Telephone system has an office also, where several girls are employed as clerks. The city owns its own water system, and other girls are engaged in the work of that office.

The town has two large tobacco warehouses where great quantities of tobacco are sold during the season. Some of the tobacco raised in this section is very fine and is eagerly sought by discriminating buyers. The place is also the center of a fine apple section, some of the best apples in the world being raised at Algoma, a short distance from Rocky Mount.

By far the largest and most prosperous business venture of the place is the Bald Knob Furniture Factory which is engaged in the manufacture of bedroom suits exclusively. They employ 336 men and four women in the office. They pay the workers an average of thirty-seven cents an hour, and generally work forty-two hours a week. At present they are not working quite full time, but expect to be in a few day. This business was established forty years ago, and has been almost constantly in operation since that time. The plant was burned in 1932, but was immediately rebuilt on a much larger scale. Many of the workers here live outside the corporate limits of the town. The organization owns about thirty-five small houses which they rent to the workers if they wish.

There is a large and rather handsome Coca-Cola plant where the popular beverage is manufactured and bottled, and hundreds of cases are sent out daily by a large truck owned by the company.

Two dry cleaning plants have been established here and do a flourishing business, while the Mount Theater showing pictures daily and twice on Sundays and holidays finds many votives, particularly on ten cent night which is featured once or twice each week.

The usual number of carpenters, brickmasons, plasterers and interior decorators have been idle most of the winter on account of the severe weather which has hindered almost every activity, except the coal industry. With the coming of spring there is the prospect of employment for these at their usual vocation. □

ESSIE W. SMITH, *better known as Miss Essie, was a native of Franklin County and daughter of Zackfield T. and Kitty Greer Wade. She taught school several years in Franklin County and was employed during the 1930s depression as a researcher for the W.P.A. writer's project for Virginia. Her research led to the publication of three booklets of local historical interest:* War Whoops in the Wilderness, Explorers in the Wilderness, *and* The White Man Comes to Stay, *all by Anne Heaton, author. She was a member of the Daughters of the American Revolution and the United Daughters of the Confederacy, serving as state president in 1919. She served as Franklin County librarian, 1943-1954 and spent many years collecting information for the purpose of writing a history of Franklin County. She left volumes of notes and an unfinished manuscript at her death in 1963. Comment has often been made of "her most interesting style of relating facts." Miss Essie, "a lady of charm and grace and the epitome of refinement," desired most of all that the people of Franklin County appreciate their rich historical legacy. This article is published as written by her (1940).*

Agriculture in Franklin County

Henry Hopkins

For about two centuries farmers living in Franklin County practiced subsistence farming. Since they lacked good roads and waterways, they tried to take care of most of their needs on the farm or in their locality. They raised fruits, vegetables, livestock, poultry, sheep for wool and flax for linen; kept bees to get honey for sweetening; and collected beeswax for candles. Tobacco, cattle, and wheat were used to acquire cash to meet such needs as salt, rifles, farm tools, and land to pay taxes and loans. In the earlier days, tobacco was accepted as a payment in kind for taxes.

As the roads and means of transportation improved, farmers abandoned subsistence farming in favor of concentration on one or two products such as tobacco, small grain, poultry, dairies, cattle, hogs, and fruits such as apples. Horses, mules, and oxen almost disappeared from the farm to be replaced by tractors, trucks, and automobiles. Money, once scarce, was now plentiful. Time, once plentiful, was now scarce. In the early 1900s a farmer would take all day driving a cow to Roanoke to be sold for five or six dollars. Today, in order to have more time for his duties on the farm, he pays a hauler eight or ten dollars to take a cow to the stockyard to be sold for $300 or more.

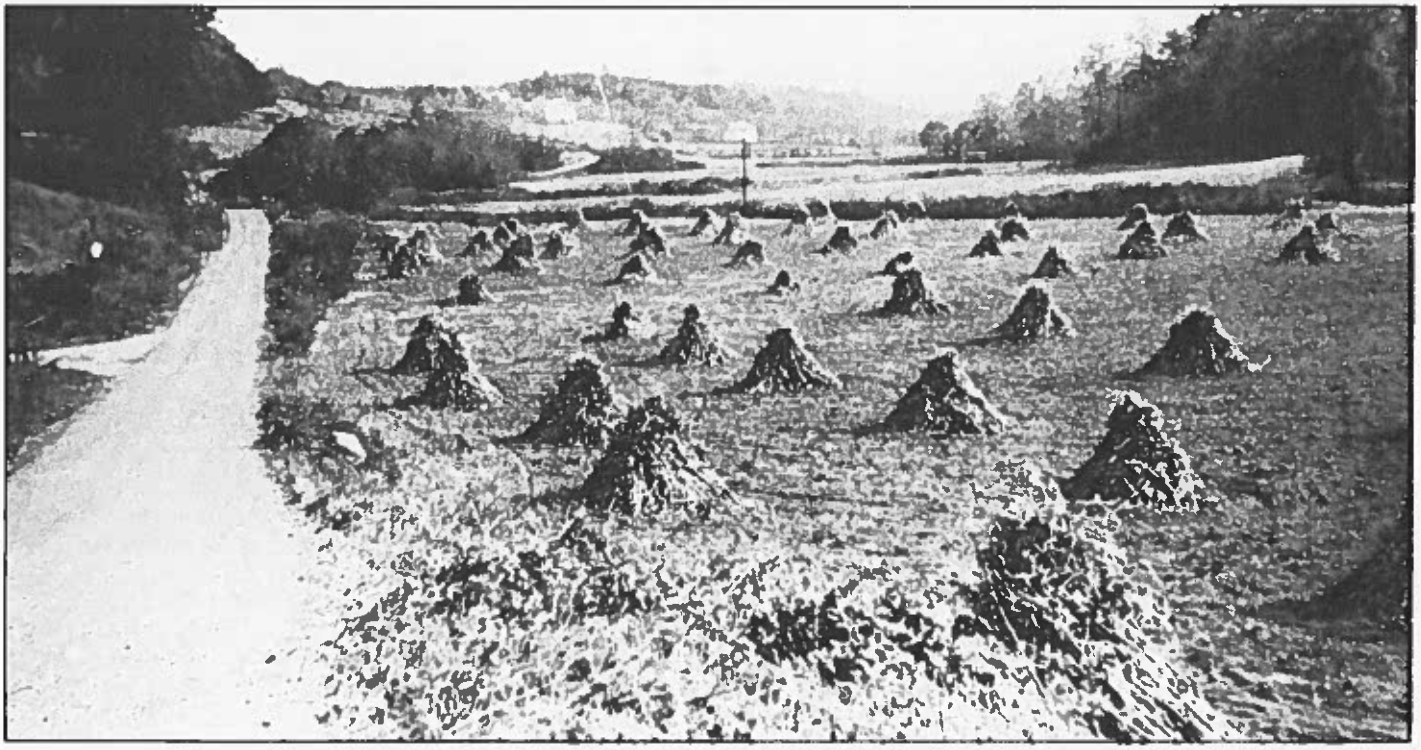
The General Assembly in 1785 assigned the first Monday in each month as Court Day in Franklin County. This was the day the gentlemen justices dealt with civil and criminal matters. The court attracted farmers to socialize and to buy and sell or trade horses, cattle, pigs, and other farm products. Also, drummers (salesmen) came on that day to sell their wares and haggle over the prices for their goods with the farmers. Court Day prevailed into the middle of the twentieth century. It ended when subsistence farming gave way to intensive farming and it became cheaper for farmers to buy at the grocery and dry goods stores.

Early Court Days were for males only. Since drunkenness and fighting were by-products of the socializing and trading, it was thought that Court Day was no place for ladies. Even the women living in the town did not dare venture out on that day. In November of 1916, Virginia's Prohibition Law went into effect and the town of Rocky Mount's only saloon closed. Soon, Court Day became a family day.

When the settlers came to Franklin County after 1786, they found most of the cleared land was rolling land and not the rich level bottoms by the Pigg and Blackwater rivers. The larger trees and unlevel land made it more difficult to clear the land. Before "The War," the slave owners owned most of the prized river bottoms, giving the impression that their slaves were used to clear most of the bottoms.

In the year the county was founded, a survey was made by the gentlemen justices. They found 1,146 white men over twenty-one years old, 680 white women over twenty-one, 92 whites under twenty-one, 378 slaves over sixteen years, and 444 slaves under the age of sixteen. Also counted were 1,865 horses and 4,318 cattle.

In the first United States Farm Census taken in 1850, there were 5,821 white males, 5,817 white females, 66 free persons of color, and 5,226 slaves. The census listed the following: 1,299 farms; 126,269 improved acres; 225,598 unimproved acres; 3,649 horses, asses and mules; 11,538 neat cattle; 9,411 sheep; and 26,865 hogs. The land produced 76,831 bushels of wheat, 192,079 bushels of rye and oats (probably mostly oats), 43,408 bushels of corn, 35,733 bushels of Irish and sweet potatoes, 1,893 bushels of peas, 33 bushels of barley, 865 bushels of buckwheat, 1,260 tons of hay, 15 pounds of hops, 22,625 pounds of flax, 329 bushels of clover and other grass seeds and 1,125,404 pounds of tobacco. The cows produced 126,643 pounds of butter and cheese; 13,952 pounds of wool were sheared from the



sheep; 12,892 pounds of beeswax were recovered from the honey.

It is believed that some farmers took part in Virginia's agricultural revival of the 1840s and 1850s. It is more than likely that the large landowners with many slaves were exposed through newspapers, pamphlets, and books to the new methods of farming, such as crop rotation, use of land plaster (gypsum) and a decreased emphasis on tobacco. In the 1860s, at the Lynchburg Agricultural Fair, Moses Booth won the first prize of $10 for his apple brandy, the only alcoholic beverage category to be judged. The Civil War ended the surge to improve agriculture and land construction practices, which were not to accelerate again until the 1930s.

Since farmland was abundant and the transportation system poor, farmers were not encouraged to use commercial fertilizers. The continuous clearing of new land and abandoning of old worn-out land allowed the exhausted land to erode and to grow broom sage, briars, and trees. Then years later, farmers throughout the county again cleared the old worn-out land and proceeded to grow crops on it until the 1930s.

After the railroads were built in the county at the end of the nineteenth century, dehydrated limestone became the most popular form of lime fertilizer. Often when the farmer received the limestone, it was in chunks. He would drop the chunks on the land at intervals. After nature had made them into powder, the farmer would spread the lime with a shovel. By the early years of the twentieth century, farmers began to use sparingly commercial fertilizers such as phosphate, potash, and nitrogen on wheat and tobacco.

In 1850, there had been 1,297 farms in the county averaging 271 acres. By 1920, the number of farms increased to 4,205 averaging 95 acres. Probably there was more open land in the county at this time than at any other time in the county's history. By 1978, the number of farms had dropped to less than 1,138 averaging 175 acres.

Both before the war and afterwards into the twentieth century, Lynchburg and Danville were the most popular markets for the county's tobacco and grain. By 1860, there were seventeen tobacco factories in the county, which purchased tobacco from the farmers. There were a few factories after the war. Probably the last tobacco factory was the firm of Price and Hurt, which manufactured Yellow Rose Smoking Tobacco.

Fire-cured tobacco, called dark tobacco by farmers, was used mainly for chewing tobacco. It was the type of tobacco most often raised until the early 1900s. It is not known when flue-cured tobacco, used mostly in making cigarettes, was first grown in the county. It was not until 1930 that the Agricultural Census gave the estimated pounds produced of each type of tobacco. The 1930 census lists 1,733,000 pounds of flue-cured and 780,000 pounds of fire-cured tobacco raised in the county. By 1972, 2,914,000 pounds of flue-cured, 17,000 pounds of fire-cured and 6,000 pounds of sun-cured tobacco were raised. The dark tobacco, which had a heavier leaf than the flue-cured or light-colored tobacco, could be raised anywhere in the county since it did not require a special type of soil. Even so, in the early part of the twentieth century, the farmers in the northern and western sections of the county began to abandon tobacco for apples, poultry, truck gardening, grain, hay, and other crops that would support beef and dairy cattle.

For many years there were tobacco warehouses in Rocky Mount where locally produced crops were sold. This was a typical sale as the auctioneer and buyers for several major tobacco companies along with local farmers interested in the sale moved along the long rows of neatly stacked piles of tobacco.

By 1900, Rocky Mount had tobacco warehouses where buyers from different tobacco companies bid on the tobacco brought there by the farmers. The Banner Warehouse on Claiborne and the Farmers Warehouse on Franklin Street were two of the early warehouses. Franklin Warehouse on Main Street was the last to be built and also was the last tobacco warehouse in the county, closing in 1960. Virginia Leaf Tobacco Company, R.J. Reynolds Tobacco Company, American Tobacco Company, Liggett and Myers Tobacco Company, Sanford Tobacco Company, and China-American Company were some of the buyers at those warehouses. Today, most of the tobacco raised in the county is sold in Danville, Virginia.

On most farms in the county, it was customary to have several apple trees. Some farms would have as many as 500 apple trees. The western and northern sections of the county had the most trees. At Algoma, located near Callaway, Dr. Sam Guerrant owned the county's largest apple orchard in the first half of the twentieth century. Dr. Guerrant had an almost self-sufficient orchard with its sawmill, gristmill, blacksmith shop, packinghouse and supply of electricity. Over two hundred acres of apple trees were raised, and apples were shipped mainly to Great Britain.

Located northwest of Boones Mill, Occanneechi Orchards, the largest apple orchard in the county today was started by Arthur ("Buck") Garst. Two of his sons enlarged and increased the number of trees to 35,000, covering about two hundred acres. From its packing house, the apples are shipped to brokers in the Midwest and eastern United States.

In the 1950s and early 1960s, Franklin County poultry raising enjoyed its heyday. In 1959, it was estimated that 849,711 chickens were sold. In 1964, over 979,252 dozen eggs were sold. Later many farmers, finding chickens no longer profitable, abandoned poultry for dairying.

Two factors helped to provide the county with a market for dairy products at the turn of this century: Roanoke became a large city and the Norfolk and Western Railroad began service through Franklin County. At first county farmers sold butter in the city and later they supplied milk to Roanoke's dairies. In 1914, W.P. Saunders, of Bleak Hill, the first Grade A dairyman in the county, shipped his milk by railroad from Ferrum to the Clover Creamery in Roanoke. By 1917, B.T. Flora and J.A. Naff were also shipping milk to Roanoke from

Hogsheads of pumace on their way to a distillery near Endicott, cuca 1904-1905. The gentleman in the tie is Mr. Cabell France, a clerk at Tyler Thomas' store in Endicott.

Boones Mill. Six years later, 300 gallons of milk were shipped daily from Boones Mill alone.

By that time, some milk was being shipped by truck as well as by rail. In 1926, the national highway, Route 30, now called Route 220, was completed making it easier to haul milk to Roanoke by truck. In 1917, two cheese plants had been started at Retreat and Dugwell but since farmers got a better price for Grade A milk used as fluid milk than for cheese milk, the cheese plants soon closed.

In the meantime, the farmers in the northwest section of the county were attempting to improve their dairy cows. In 1911 B.F. Flora, J.A. Naff, C.G. Clingenpeel, and Samuel Bowman bought the first registered Holstein bull. Seven years later, the first large number of dairy cattle were brought into the county from Ohio with each participating farmer getting one or two head.

The county hired G.L. Bowman as its first county farm agent. He served from 1917 to 1920 and was followed by W.A. Alexander who came the year after the stock market crash. Alexander arrived during the county's worst drought to date in the twentieth century. It was so dry in the Boones Mill area that Maggodee Creek stopped flowing each day at 1:00 p.m. The County Farm Agent gave the farmers money to buy feed for their livestock.

W.A. Alexander demonstrated terracing in the different neighborhoods. Many of the farmers eagerly applied this procedure to stop soil erosion on their farms. Through his guidance, the Franklin County Holstein Bull Association, Inc., popularly called the Bull Ring, was started to improve dairy herds. The farmers would jointly purchase a bull, which was then kept in turn by each farmer belonging to the Bull Ring for a few months before passing it to another member. Eventually, there were three Holstein bull rings. The offspring from this system showed an increase of over five hundred pounds of milk per location. The Bull Ring is believed to be the only successful association of its type in the United States.

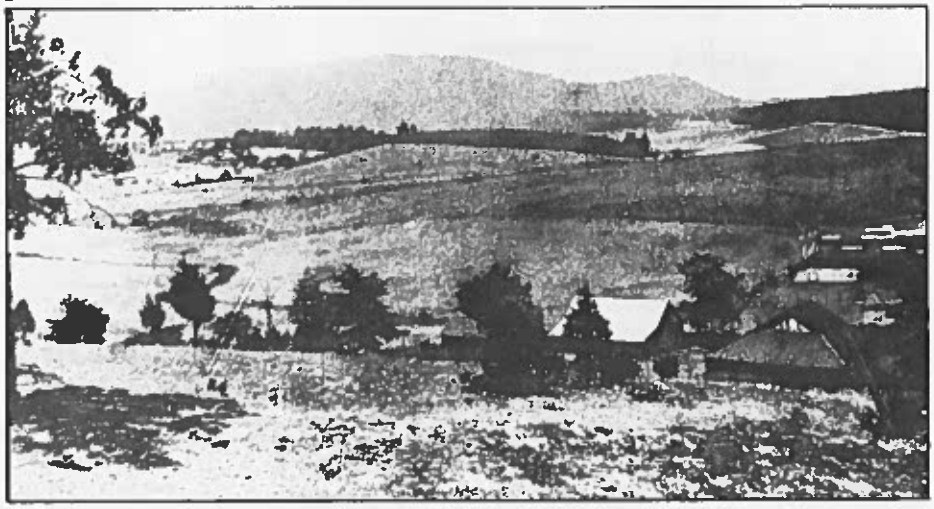
In 1936, the U.S. Government located Franklin's Civil Conservation Corps camp on the Callaway road near Gogginsville. The CCC boys, as they were called by the farmers, used axes, shovels, posthole diggers, and other small tools to stop erosion. Most farmers felt that the CCC performed a great service to the county.

In 1942, County Farm Agent E.W. ("Kit") Carson persuaded Southern Dairies to open a receiving milk plant in Rocky Mount. This gave Non-Grade A farmers a market for their milk. That same year, J.B. Flora became assistant county farm agent and through his guidance, the 4-H Program grew. By 1944, the Franklin County 4-H had the largest dairy heifer show in the South.

The next progressive step for dairying was the organization of the Franklin County Artificial Breeders Association in 1947. After one year of operation, other surrounding counties joined, changing the name to Blue Ridge Artificial Breeders Association. The association owned its own facilities with the help of the Franklin County Board of Supervisors' gift of land from the poorhouse farm. Later the consolidation with the Artificial Breeders Association of Northern Virginia, the new association's members decided to locate in Franklin County because the facilities were owned by the Blue Ridge Breeders Association. The new organization, the Virginia Artificial Breeders Association, elected as its first president, William Angle, a Rocky Mount businessman and dairy farm owner. Later this association joined a national cooperative Select Sires, Inc., with headquarters in Ohio.

Today, Franklin County ranks third in Virginia in number of dairy cows. It owes its strong position in the state dairy industry to aggressive farmers, good leadership from the County Farm Agents Office, the competitiveness of the machinery and feed dealers in the area, the cooperation of the County Board of Supervisors, and the improvement of the county's roads. □

HENRY HOPKINS, *a native of Franklin County and son of the late Judge A.H. Hopkins and Catherine Lee Hopkins, is a dairyman, a past history teacher in the public school system of Franklin County, and an avid researcher and student of local history.*



Dr. William's farm in present Rocky Mount was regarded as one of the best farms in the area. The physician lived in the building presently occupied by Drs. Quioco and Barrett on Main Street. This view from near the house faces Northeast across areas now covered by industry and residences.

Franklin County Moonshine

V. K. Stoneman

Over the broad scope the history of corn whiskey is really a story of pioneer America, beginning almost as soon as the first colonists settled in America. Even the Mayflower crew allowed adequate shipping space for a healthy supply of spirits, well-documented on the voyages by passengers and supply ships. As the early colonists went about the enormous task of carving out a New World from the wilderness, there always seemed a time or occasion for a drink of some available spirit. From New England to Virginia, the forests kept being pushed back and new land claimed for planting and homebuilding.

The first grain distillery in the 1620s, from Indian corn, took place along the James River in Virginia. Captain George Thorpe, a Cambridge University scholar and socio-religious worker among the Indians, developed the art in that region. He was killed by the Indians, who got too much of his whiskey or his religion, or got the two confused. By the year 1685, alcoholic beverages, although not plentiful, were made in some form throughout the entire length and breadth of the populated areas of the New America.

George Washington was one great future leader who would cast his stamp of approval by operating his own still at his Dogue farm near Mount Vernon. Thomas Jefferson would be another of the influential breed of men who possessed the talent of leadership and the know-how to produce good whiskey.

It wasn't until 1771, when a tax on the domestic manufacture of alcoholic beverages was imposed, that the problem of liquor law enforcement began. Moonshiners were required to register their stills and pay a tax on all whiskey produced. This tax caused violent opposition among the moonshiners. To most, they contended, the law infringed upon their right to free enterprise; to others, it was a personal insult. Some decided to stay and fight the "revenooers"; others moved into Indian country hoping to get beyond the reach of tax collectors. This type of rebellion continued on for many, many years, with various laws and methods tried and discarded, to control and tax the illegal making of corn, commonly referred to as *moonshine* whiskey. Finally the great Prohibition experiment was tried on a nationwide scale. It was during this period, from 1918 to 1933, that general lawlessness reached its highest peak.

As the demand for liquor increased with the adoption of prohibition, criminal organizations were formed throughout the country to supply the demand. What had once been the legal industry now became the illegal industry. Criminals of all types got into the illegal whiskey business. Large syndicates were formed. Gang slayings became frequent. The name Arthur ("Dutch Schultz") Flegenheimer, Alphonse ("Scarface Al") Capone, Irving ("Waxey Gordon") Wexler, Harry Fleisher and others became national figures. Racketeers made such high profits from illegal whiskey that federal, state, and local law enforcement officers, prosecutors, and judges were corrupted and elections influenced.

Racketeers were operating large stills, while, at the same time, they found another source of production in the small distillers, that operated outside the areas dominated by the syndicate. These distilleries, located in Tennessee, North Carolina, Virginia, and Georgia, became known as "moonshiners" and the name has carried on down through time to the present day.

Webster defines *moonshiner* as one who makes or sells illicit whiskey. The term originated in the Old World and was used to describe illicit brandy smugglers who manufactured and smuggled brandy into England from France and Holland. But most likely the term found its beginning in occupations that necessitated work at night or by the light of the moon. The *moonshiner*, by tradition and by trade, is the most colorful figure in the illicit whiskey business, the man at the still.

The term *bootlegger* has an interesting history. This term originated in early colonial days when the selling of alcoholic beverages to Indians was discouraged. An unscru-

This view of moonshining in western Franklin County of the early 20th century utilizing an old turnip type still reflects an age old tradition in the county. The small copper still was noted for its high quality liquor and the design was unchanged for centuries until the introduction of the submarine type which replaced altogether the turnip still. From left, Arthur Martin (with banjo), Sparrell C. Rakes, T.P. "Press" Martin, and Wiley Thomas.

pulous operator, who found a drunken Indian easier and more profitable to trade with, would conceal a bottle of whiskey in the top of his boot and cover the bottle with his pants leg; hence the term *bootlegger*.

On January 16, 1919, the Eighteenth Amendment was ratified by the thirty-sixth state as required, to become effective one year thereafter. This one-year stay of execution allowed legal distillers to dispose of products on hand, which amounted to 58 to 60 million gallons. The Volstead Act, intended to give the government ample enforcement powers, was passed over the veto of President Woodrow Wilson and became law on October 28, 1919.

Federal still seizures of 1923 and 1924 were 51,368, and 107,991 persons were arrested for violations in the same two-year period. According to a federal commissioner's chart of still seizures, the leading states were Georgia, 6,155; Tennessee, 4,232, Virginia 3,919; North Carolina, 3,287; with all states in the nation showing an increase in still seizures.

By 1925, federal still seizures for one year had reached an all-time high of 29,087 and arrests topped the 76,000 mark. Prohibition-enforcement agents now numbered 3,700 engaged in prohibition work.

The automobile in this area became an important tool of both the prohibition agent and the moonshiner-bootlegger. Fast and effective transportation was a must. The early automobiles and trucks were admirable machines. Some of the gangster-owned cars of prohibition days have been on public display for years and still attract museum goers with their powerful motors, excellent workmanship, and custom bulletproof design.

It is general knowledge that certain moonshiners and transporters from Franklin County had syndicate connections and many carloads of Franklin County whiskey reached the big cities of Chicago, Philadelphia, and Baltimore.

I will not bore you readers with more figures, but the numbers of still seizures and arrests continued to mount and corruption was a national scandal.

In the presidential election year of 1932, public outcry against the Eighteenth Amendment became a fighting national issue. The outcry was based on moral and constitutional grounds, with the recognition that the Volstead Act, or Prohibition, was unenforceable. The will of the people was firm enough in this year to effect national party leaders in favor of repeal.

On December 5, 1933, after congressional approval, ratification followed by the President on the same day with a proclamation declaring the Eighteenth Amendment repealed. Federal prohibition was over, but states still had the right to remain wet or dry as the dictates of their people demanded.

During the Prohibition Era, in Virginia as well as other states, general lawlessness and corruption had reached such a peak that many conservative and temperance-minded people felt there must be a better way of liquor control. A statewide election was held on October 3, 1933, to decide whether to continue state prohibition or to adopt a plan of liquor control. There was a majority of votes cast in favor of a plan of liquor control.

On December 13, 1933, the Virginia General Assembly overwhelmingly adopted a bill forming the Alcoholic Beverage Control Board. Three board members were appointed by the governor. The board members knew from the very beginning that they must properly administer, for the state, the retail sale of liquor. They also knew their main purpose was control. The board must have the respect and support of the public to survive, and the system must be flexible enough to meet changing times. With this in mind, the Alcoholic Beverage Control Board opened offices in Richmond on March 22, 1934, and set about forming the ideals and policies of the board.

The general functions of the Alcoholic Beverage Control Board were: (1) the establishment of state-owned A.B.C. stores for the sale of hard liquor; (2) the licensing of approved establishments for the sale of alcoholic beverages; and (3) the enforcement of A.B.C. laws relative to the illegal sale, manufacture, or possession of liquor.

To this day, the A.B.C. Board operates along the same lines as when it was organized in 1934. Virginia is noted for being and has been recognized as a model state and is rated the top in the nation in the regulation and control of alcoholic beverages. Scandal and corruption that have been associated with liquor control, or lack of control, in other parts of the country have never been found in Virginia's control program.

"So Virginia had gone wet · liquor would be sold in state-owned liquor stores. The moonshiner would scrap his still and go into legitimate business." Or would he?

The moonshiner, either from necessity to make a living or from having moonshining in his blood or to fill the demand for "homemade" liquor, or for whatever reason, continued to thrive in Virginia and very much so in certain areas such as Franklin , Floyd, and Henry counties.

After a prolonged investigation into moonshining practices in Franklin County in the 1930s, the Great Franklin County Conspiracy trial began on April 22, 1935, and was attended by the noted author Sherwood Anderson. His account is here quoted and summarized.

Anderson's article, entitled "City Gangs Enslave Moonshine Mountaineers: The Amazing but Little Known Story of How an Outlaw Group of Big-Time Racketeers Made a Remote Virginia County the Wettest Spot in the U.S.A." appeared in *Liberty Magazine* in November 1935. Anderson started off by asking, "What is the wettest section in the U.S.A., the place where, during prohibition and since, the most illicit liquor has been made? The extreme wet spot, per number of people, isn't in New York or Chicago. By the undisputed evidence given at a recent trial in the United States Court at Roanoke, Virginia, the spot that fairly dripped illicit liquor, and kept right on dripping it after prohibition ended, is in the mountain country of southwestern Virginia — Franklin County, Virginia.

"As to the amount of liquor made in the mountain county right on in the years after prohibition ended, some notion may be had by the figures given in the testimony.

"Fred O. Maier, representative of Standard Brands, Washington, D.C., testified that 70,448 pounds of a single standard brand of yeast, such as is used in distilling, was sold in the county in four years. The yeast was sold in pound packages, each containing thirty-two pieces. That sounds something like 21,000,000 brews. A lot. Franklin County, Virginia, has a population of 24,000. The city of Richmond with 189,000 people, used 2,000 pounds of yeast during the same period. There were said to be single families in the county that used 5,000 pounds of sugar a month.

"There were other startling figures introduced by the government. These, totaled by government statisticians, revealed purchases of commodities useful to illicit liquor makers as follows: sugar, 33,839,109 pounds; corn meal, 13,307,477 pounds; rye meal, 2,408,308 pounds; malt, 1,018,420 pounds; hops, 30,366 pounds; and miscellaneous grain products, 15,276,071 pounds."

Anderson commented on the consumption of non-gurgling five-gallon tin cans. "Into this one mountain county during a four-year period there were shipped 205 carloads of 516,176 pounds." One witness testified that a carload runs about 3,000 cans, which means that the county consumed more than 600,000 of the five-gallon cans.

"That would account for some 3,501,115 gallons of moon liquor pouring down out of this one mountain county, being rushed at night in fast cars into the coal-mining regions of West Virginia, to the big Virginia towns along the valley, to Roanoke, Lynchburg, Norfolk, and on into Eastern cities. The business, once organized, kept growing. They were at it up to the moment when some thirty-four of the more prominent citizens of the county were brought into the United States Court."

Anderson pointed out the highly organized nature of the industry in Franklin County and how the little moonshiner had been taken advantage of by organized crime.

"In Franklin County the little fellows were out. The officers, it seemed, had to make a show now and then, a few stills captured and cut up, so they got the cobwebs. Any number of the little fellows testified at the trial. 'I tried making a little run but I got caught.'"

"It was the contention of the government in the conspiracy trial that the little fellows, the old-fashioned rifle-toting mountain moonshiners of romance, had been quite put out of business in this section. The county had been divided off into sections, a big blockade and a state office for each section. Some of the really big operators didn't make any liquor at all." On the other hand, "Men running stills, back in the mountain laurel, for the big fellows, working for the big fellows - some of them testified, turning out moon at ten cents a gallon."

The trial was not without its romantic figures. "There was Willy Carter Sharpe on the witness stand. She is a rather handsome slender black-haired woman of thirty. . . She had, however, a passion for automobiles and developed into a fast and efficient driver. A Virginia businessman at the trial, full of admiration, whispered of her accomplishments: 'I saw her go right through the main street of our town and there was a federal car after her. They were banging away, trying to shoot down her tires, and she was driving at seventy-five miles an hour. . . She got away.'"

Summing up the prevailing attitude about the big-time conspiracy that existed, Anderson noted, "One of the men accused — he had pleaded guilty and faced prison: 'I'm glad it's over. It had got too big. We don't want our county to be like that'. . . The mountain men came down, some of them, to convict themselves. They seemed to want it stopped. They seemed to want to go back to the old ways."

In summary, this writer will attempt to share with you some of my personal thoughts, experiences, and feelings based on my work as an Enforcement Officer with the A.B.C. Board in Franklin County for the past twenty-six years.

Upon coming to Franklin County, it was like another world. I had grown up in Wythe County and had been a deputy sheriff for approximately ten years prior to becoming an investigator with the A.B.C. Board. I had limited knowledge of the making of moonshine and dealing with "moonshiners." I had envisioned a moonshiner as a dangerous criminal who would violate any and all the laws of the Commnwealth. I was soon to learn that my idea of a moonshiner was not necessarily as I had thought him to be. In fact, in some cases, I soon developed compassion for some of the old-timers. In most cases, aside from their moonshining or illicit whiskey dealing, they were honest, law-abiding, accommodating people who were respected in the community. In the course of my work, I became acquainted with numerous moonshiners, bootleggers and transporters, perhaps in the hundreds.

Six 800 gallon blackpot submarine stills being destroyed by A.B.C. agents in 1980 in Franklin County. Left to right, A.B.C. Officer, J.A. Bowman, A.T.F. Officer Price and A.B.C. Officer V.K. Stoneman. This operation could produce approximately 500 gallons of whiskey per run.

In researching some old Activity Reports of the A.B.C. Enforcement Division, the following still seizures were made in Franklin County and the state of Virginia:

1959-60	124	stills statewide, 55 in Franklin County,
	156	arrests for A.B.C. violations,
	34	vehicles seized-transporting illegal whiskey
1968-69	294	illegal distilleries statewide,
	63	in Franklin County
1980-81	177	illegal distilleries statewide
	78	in Franklin County,
	3828	gallons illegal whiskey state wide
1981-82	158	stills statewide
	74	in Franklin County
	3909	gallons illegal whiskey

I will not bore you with more figures, but as you can see, in spite of all modern technology, the state of the economy, and modern police techniques, the illegal whiskey business continues in Franklin County and the state of Virginia, although there has been some reduction in the past four or five years. For example, there were twenty-six illegal distilleries seized in Franklin County for the fiscal year 1984-1985.

I feel as long as the sun rises over Smith Mountain Lake and sets over Philpott Lake to the west, there will be liquor made in Franklin County, and all that I, and the police officers who follow me after my retirement, can do is attempt to control and monitor the same to prevent the re-occurrence of the situation that prevailed during the Prohibition era. □

V.K. STONEMAN, *a native of Wythe County residing in Franklin County since 1959, has been employed by the Enforcement Division of the Virginia Alcoholic Beverage Control Board where he has served as investigator and supervisor for western Virginia, and now serves as Special Agent in Charge.*

Franklin County's Traditional Music

Kip Lornell and Vaughan Webb

Amid their hopes and longings the first settlers carried with them to Franklin County a strong and diverse musical heritage that served them in work, worship, and recreation. The music of the region reflected not only the influence of colonial life in America but of European and African cultures as well. Over the years the county's folk music changed to meet the tastes of the people who embraced it. Today, although the songs and tunes continue to evolve, local residents are treated to such traditional musical styles as string-band, blues, and gospel music.

Franklin County has long been associated with string bands and dance tunes. Until recently the fiddle and banjo have been essential components of parties in both black and white communities. Frolics followed wood gatherings and corn shuckings, and the combination of dance music and liquid refreshments often fueled the festivities until dawn. In the minds of many white county residents, music and drink merge in the form of the legendary Charlie Poole.

Although not a Franklin County native, Poole spent many weeks playing in the area during the middle and late 1920s. Many older residents in the southern parts of Franklin tell of the musician's playing and drinking, for the two went hand-in-hand with Charlie Poole. His 78 r.p.m. recordings from this period are still highly prized by local residents.

While Charlie Poole is certainly the most well-known and notorious folk musician affiliated with Franklin County, he has certainly not been our only skilled picker. Six years after Poole's death in 1931, a researcher from the Library of Congress, Herbert Halpert, came to Franklin County in search of other string-band musicians. Led by the late Raymond Sloan, Halpert spent two days in Ferrum recording Howard Maxey and Peg Hatcher before moving on to another section of the state.

Stringband from Ferrum area (c. 1937). Left to right: Roxie Sigmon Wimmer, Ella Gusler Carter, Myrtle Sigmon Kalwagy.

Fine string-band musicians still abound here, though most of them are middle-aged or older. The county's younger musicians tend to be more interested in bluegrass, a commercial development of old-time music that arose during the 1940s. This transition from old-time to bluegrass is common and natural. Franklin County banjo player Lawerence Wright was typical, having first learned his instrument in the old-time clawhammer style but eventually developing a three-finger bluegrass technique. Wright played for years in bluegrass groups in the Roanoke and Franklin County area.

Three of Franklin County's finest contemporary old-time string bands are Pedro Cooper and the Pumpkin Vines, the Original Orchard Grass Old-Time String Band, and the Dryhill Draggers. With women playing autoharp, fiddle, and guitar, Cooper's group stands out among the predominately male string-band tradition. Members of the Original Orchard Grass Old-Time String Band stress the "Original" in answer to the many musicians who mistakenly identify modern tunes and techniques as old and authentic. Much of this mislabeled music is played by younger revivalists who have no strong cultural and musical ties to the area. The Dryhill Draggers are notable for their strong ensemble playing and their representation of the county at the 1982 Knoxville World's Fair.

Important in black communities, too, string-band music was an early key to racial cooperation and sharing. White musicians, such as Endicott's Ted Boyd, learned much from black fiddlers or banjo players. Many blacks played in string bands at house parties in white as well as black neighborhoods. Today the Afro-American string-band musician is a rarity; one of the last such musicians is John Lawson Tyree, of Sontag.

Blues is another important form of Franklin County's Afro-American musical heritage, though it appears to be less prevalent here now than it is in other sections of the state. Like old-time music, blues has declined with the death of older musicians. Bluesmen such as Archie Edwards and John Tinsley both grew up in Franklin County but have since moved away. Another colorful local character who played some blues was Lewis ("Rabbit") Muse. Muse, who passed away in 1982, was a true all-around entertainer whose skills brought him into a variety of performance contexts from medicine shows to television.

Currently, the strongest forms of folk music in Franklin County are religious. Gospel music is the most widely practiced style, and several fine, long-standing gospel groups perform here. Though no longer together, one of the early groups, the Big Brothers Quartet, was formed in 1948 by the Coger brothers of Cole's Creek Baptist Church. Notable among contemporay groups are the Starlight Gospel Singers and the Star Gospel Singers, both of which have performed weekly on local radio shows for over twenty-five years.

Rabbit Muse was an adept singer, instrumentalist and entertainer.

Naturally, other types of religious musical traditions are maintained in local churches,too. Excellent older *a cappella* traditional singing can be heard within the German Baptist and Primitive Baptist sects. Moving, energetic songs and instrumentation power the services in the county's Pentecostal congregations. The singing of most churches falls somewhere between these two styles.

There is little doubt that traditional music in Franklin County will undergo substantial changes in the next and final two decades of the twentieth century. Of course, age weighs heavily upon these traditions, but local folk music has been changing rapidly since World War II because of television, radio, and the record industry. While future listeners are sure to hear bluegrass and gospel, it is unclear what transformations today's folk music will undergo to remain vital and useful. □

KIP LORNELL *and* VAUGHAN WEBB *are folklorists at the Blue Ridge Institute of Ferrum College. Their research efforts on the musical heritage of Virginia have resulted in the recording of several albums, and the production of several video tapes and special television programs dealing with the traditional music of Virginia.*

Newspapers in Franklin County

Kermit W. Salyer

One would think that a history of newspapers in Franklin County would be easy to come by, with all the printed copies that should have survived. But that is not the case. In many instances, there are no surviving copies of some of the papers published in the county over the past 150 years.

We have to take it on faith that the *Franklin Whig* was the first newspaper published in Franklin County, since there are no extant copies and we must rely on the word of earlier writers such as Marshall Wingfield and J.G. Claiborne.

According to their published accounts, the *Franklin Whig* was established in 1834 by Colton Cabanass and Matthew H. Jackson, a Presbyterian minister. This newspaper was apparently published until 1872, since the old accounts say it was succeeded by the *Franklin Gazette*.

The *Franklin Gazette* first appeared in October 1872. The May 26, 1876, issue is volume 4, no. 31, which means that it was nearly four years old at that time. Randolph Dickinson, who died in 1902 (grandfather of Dick and Strayer Dickinson), was editor of the *Franklin Gazette* in 1872-1873. The property was purchased from him by W.A. and C.J. Griffith, who published it until the spring of 1876, when it was acquired by W.R. Murrell and W.A. Belcher. Murrell and Belcher changed the name to the *Virginia Monitor* (weekly, Democrat). The change was in name only, for the typeface for the flag and body type and the makeup of the paper remained the same.

I located a front page of the *Virginia Monitor* at the American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Massachusetts. I found the *Franklin Gazette* at the Alderman Library, University of Virginia. Copies of several other old county newspapers were unearthed at the Virginia State Library and at the Franklin County Public Library.

After a few months, the *Virginia Monitor* was merged into the *Conservative*, at Salem, which was begun by the Griffiths in 1876. I have examined copies of these early newspapers and find it interesting that lawyers, doctors, and other professional people advertised - and on the front page! Considering the furor raised just a few years ago when lawyers and doctors started advertising again, it seems as though that agitation was ill-advised in view of the long history of advertising by those professionals.

Another *Franklin Gazette* (weekly, Democrat) was established in 1876 by Gabriel Banks and W.I. Boone, but within a short time Banks sold out to William Bush. Bush, in turn, sold to John W. Stump, of Bedford County, who kept it only a few months. The paper was purchased by Abraham Hancock and W.A. Belcher in the summer of 1877. It was edited by N.C. Carper until 1880.

N.C. Carper was the father of Wilson Carper (1879-1958), who served as the Franklin County clerk of court for fifty-four years. Another son, Norwood, joined with a man named Johnson and formed Johnson-Carper Furniture Company in Roanoke. That firm is now a division of Singer.

In 1880, the *Franklin Gazette* was acquired by G. Landon Scott, of Amherst County. Scott was editor in 1880-1881. The paper was published by J.C. Williams & Co., 1882-1883; by N.W. Floyd, 1883; by Charles S. Davis, 1883-1884; by E.W. Saunders, 1884-1885; and by Henry and George T. Lee, 1885-1888. In the latter year F.O. Hoffman, of Bedford County, obtained control and changed the name to the *Franklin Times* (weekly, Democrat). The paper was edited by Hoffman, 1888-1893: and by Josephus H. Barnhardt and Harris L. Moss, 1893-1894, when it was consolidated with the *Franklin Democrat* to form the *Times-Democrat* (weekly, Democrat). The *Franklin Democrat* had been organized in 1893 by F.O. Hoffman. Hoffman started the *Franklin Democrat* because of political dissention and disagreement with the *Franklin Times*.

Marshall Wingfield wrote that Hoffman developed a love for strong drink early in life and was cursed by the appetite to the end of his days. Toward the close of his life, he was such a confirmed inebriate that his friends ceased to care for him, and he was committed to the Franklin County Poorhouse. He wandered off toward Rocky Mount one day and died alone by the roadside.

A paper called the *Franklin Leader* is reported to have been established in 1902, but no copy is known to exist and no information on it can be found in the libraries I have visited.

The *Franklin Chronicle* (weekly, Democrat) succeeded the *Times-Democrat*. The *Chronicle* was established in 1905 by A.W. Robbins, who edited the paper until 1915, followed by C.B. Willis, 1915-1920, with Peter Saunders as associate editor, 1918-1920. Saunders served as editor from February 1921 until 1929, when the *Chronicle* was merged into the *County News*.

The first issue of the *County News* (weekly, Independent) was printed September 20, 1923. The original officers of the *County News* were N.P. Angle, president; John O. Martin, vice-president; C.J. Davis, treasurer; Frank Watkins, secretary; and J.L. Merrylees, editor. Merrylees was editor until December 1923, when R.P. Dickinson took over. He was the son of Randolph Dickinson of the 1872 *Franklin Gazette*. In 1929, the younger Dickinson bought the *Franklin Chronicle* (weekly, Democrat) and merged it into the *County News and Chronicle* (weekly, Independent).

The *Post* was formed in 1935 by Sol Goodman, of Martinsville. In 1936, the *Post* was bought by William Barnes who owned the *Martinsville Bulletin*. Barnes sent Edwin O. Meyer (later to become secretary-manager of the Virginia Press Association) to manage the *Post* and merge it with the *County News and Chronicle*, which he bought from the Dickinson family. The merged paper took both names and was called the *Franklin News-Post*, with a secondary line on the flag preserving the *Chronicle* name. In later years, the *Chronicle* name was dropped.

Earle M. Forsythe, a Pennsylvania newspaperman, bought the *News-Post* in 1936 and Ed Meyer remained as editor until World War II. The *News-Post* was incorporated in 1936 as the Post Publishing Corporation, with 100 shares of preferred stock and 3,800 shares of common stock.

In 1950, the corporation was sold by Forsythe to William Barnes, who had owned the paper in 1936. William Barnes died in 1952 and the Post Publishing Corporation was sold to Kermit W. Salyer in November of that year.

Salyer had visited Barnes in 1951 and discussed the purchase of the newspaper property. Barnes's asking price was $60,000, which Salyer thought was excessive since the paper was losing money. Salyer, at the time, was chief officer on tankers operated by the Greek shipping tycoon Aristotle Onassis, and he returned to sea when he couldn't strike a deal with Barnes. A year later, while transiting the Suez Canal, Salyer learned that Barnes had died. Immediately, he began negotiating with the executors of Barnes's estate for the purchase of the newspaper, which he finally achieved in November 1952, for the sum of $6,750. The *Franklin News-Post* was published as an Independent newspaper by Salyer, though he was often accused by Democrats of

favoring Republicans.

Still another newspaper called the *Franklin Gazette* was organized February 17, 1938, by Mr. and Mrs. H.G. ("Jimmy") Fossett and Walter Beverly. Mr. and Mrs. Kermit W. Salyer purchased the *Franklin Gazette* on July 24, 1958, and changed its publication day from Thursday to Tuesday. On January 1, 1968, Salyer discontined publishing the *Franklin Gazette* and began publishing the *Franklin News-Post* twice a week, on Tuesday and Thursday. Later, the *News-Post* became a triweekly, being published on Monday, Wednesday, and Friday.

Kermit W. Salyer was editor and publisher of the *Franklin News-Post* for twenty-eight years, selling it to a new corporation known as Franklin County Newspapers, Inc., on January 1, 1981. Principals in the new corporation are Mrs. Antoinette Haskel, Robert Haskel, and Willie Martin, owners of the *Martinsville Bulletin*.

The *Franklin County Times* was begun on April 4, 1968, by T. Keister Greer, a Rocky Mount lawyer; Flanders Callaway; Allen O. Woody, Jr.; and Malcolm Coe, of Bassett. They sold this paper in 1973 to three former employees of the *Franklin News-Post*. The new owners of the *News-Post* bought the *Franklin County Times* on April 23, 1981, and discontinued it. The *Franklin News-Post* is currently published three times a week, Monday, Wednesday, and Friday. □

KERMIT W. SALYER, *a native of Castlewood, Virginia and publisher of the* Franklin News Post, *1952-1981, has had a distinguished career in journalism. He was honored for the best editorial in Virginia nondaily newspapers in 1965 and received the Bicentennial George Mason Award of the Richmond Chapter of Sigma Delta Chi in 1976. He is a founder and past president of the Rocky Mount Merchants and Businessmen's Association. Presently Mr. Salyer is retired and makes his home in Rocky Mount.*

Advertisements appearing in the Franklin Chronicle 1916-1918. Courtesy Spinning Wheel Antiques.

President Jimmy Carter greets Kermit Salyer in cabinet room of the White House, 1979. Salyer was one of 30 publishers from around the nation invited to the White House for a briefing on foreign affairs by State Department and White House officials.

Franklin Chronicle

ROCKY MOUNT, VIRGINIA, THURSDAY, APRIL 13, 1916.

BASE BALL

STANDING OF CLUBS

AMERICAN LEAGUE

	W	L	PC
Boston	62	34	.646
Detroit	53	38	.624
Chicago	60	40	.600
Washington	53	43	.525
New York	47	48	.496
St. Louis	39	60	.394
Cleveland	37	59	.385
Philadelphia	33	67	.330

NATIONAL LEAGUE

	W	L	PC
Philadelphia	53	45	.541
Brooklyn	54	48	.529
New York	49	47	.510
Chicago	50	48	.510
Pittsburg	50	49	.505
Boston	51	50	.505
St. Louis	49	55	.471
Cincinnati	43	57	.430

FEDERAL LEAGUE

	W	L	PC
Chicago	58	44	.569
Newark	56	44	.560
Pittsburg	55	44	.556
Kansas City	56	45	.554
St. Louis	54	47	.535
Buffalo	47	47	.500
Brooklyn	46	59	.438
Baltimore	36	67	.343

INTERNATIONAL LEAGUE

	W	L	PC
Providence	59	32	.648
Buffalo	55	36	.604
Montreal	52	44	.542
Harrisburg	44	46	.505
Rochester	41	51	.446
Toronto	41	52	.441
Richmond	42	54	.438
Jersey City	34	58	.370

VIRGINIA LEAGUE

	W	L	PC
Suffolk	24	14	.632
Portsmouth	21	17	.553
Norfolk	20	17	.541
Rocky Mount	18	18	.500
Newport News	17	19	.472
Petersburg	11	26	.297

ROCKY MOUNT WINS A DOUBLE HEADER

Rocky Mount won two games Saturday, the first from Ferrum, 8 to 2, and the second from Sydnorsville, 15 to 9.

COME TO THE "BUSY CORNER" FOR

Fall Shoes

for the whole family. Brown's "5 Stars" for men, the kind that outwear themselves. "Buster Brown" Blue Ribbon Shoes for the school children and larger girls beat them all for wear and comfort. ASK TO SEE OUR LADIES' FINE SHOES

Dress and Apron Ginghams, Percales, Flanneletts, Outings, Domestics, Underwear, Notions, Etc., in Great Variety at Bargain Prices

Remember we are experienced butchers, and that is what it takes to handle fresh meats successfully. Try us on your next steak.

BROOKS & COMPANY

"Busy Corner"

ROCKY MOUNT, VIRGINIA

Staple and Fancy Groceries, Fresh Meats, Oysters, Foreign and Domestic Fruits, Cigars, Tobacco, Etc.

We Pay Cash for Cow Hides

EASTER HOLIDAY SPECIAL

Monday, April 24, 1916.

WINSTON-SALEM, N. C. and ROANOKE, VIRGINIA

Arrive Roanoke 11:00 A. M. Returning leave Roanoke 6:00 P. M.

The Mill Mountain Incline at Roanoke is always attractive to visitors, and the magnificent view from an altitude of 2000 ft above the city is one seldom witnessed east of the Rockies. The Dixie Motor Cycle Club will have a series of races at the Fair Grounds on this date. These two attractions alone will be well worth the trip.

The following arrangement for passengers using Train No. 24 on this date and returning on Special Train leaving Roanoke 6 p m

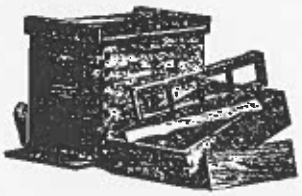
Lv.	Philpott 9:00 a. m.	$1.00
"	Henry 9:19 a. m.	1.00
"	Ferrum 9:38 a. m.	75
"	Rocky Mount 10:02 a. m	75
"	Wirtz 10:15 a. m.	50
"	Boone Mill 10:28 a. m.	50
"	Starkey 10:43 a. m.	25
Ar.	Roanoke 11 a. m.	

Tickets are good for passage on this date only.

Additional information upon application to N. & W. Railway Agents.

W. O. Saunders,
Gen. Passenger Agent.

Let Us Have Your Order for



Root's Bee Keepers' Supplies

at once. Don't wait until your bees begin to swarm.

Rocky Mount Pharmacy

AGENTS

Spring Clothes Tailored

WHEN YOU GET YOUR SPRING SUIT TAILORED BY STONECASH

You have the satisfaction of knowing you are Correctly Dressed. Suits tailored in the newest Spring Styles from strictly merchant tailor's woolens. "STONECASH" branded on your Spring Suit places you in class A, and gives you the proper lines of dress. You can't get away from a strictly Tailored Suit when it comes to correct dress. See the new Spring Woolens now on display and let us take your measure.

P. J. STONECASH

With Angle & Company's Tailoring Department.

STATEMENT OF THE CONDITION
——OF THE——

Peoples National Bank

OF ROCKY MOUNT, VA.

AT THE CLOSE OF BUSINESS, MARCH 7, 1916.

RESOURCES

Loans and Discounts	$196,403.63
Overdrafts	50
U. S. Bonds	25,000.00
Other Bonds	1,000.00
Real Estate and Fixtures	5,900.00
Cash and Due from Banks	63,198.34
Due from U. S. Treasurer	1,250.00
Stock in Federal Reserve Bank	1,050.00
	$293,862.47

LIABILITIES

Capital	$ 25,000.00
Surplus and Profits	11,321.60
Reserved for Interest	2,407.57
Circulation	25,000.00
Deposits	230,133.30
	$293,862.47

WATCH HOW WE HAVE GROWN

Below is a comparison of total resources of the Peoples National Bank for the last eight years.

March 7, 1907,	$ 32,781.28
March 7, 1908,	85,173.28
March 7, 1909,	133,592.76
March 7, 1910,	160,355.78
March 7. 1911,	174,754.71
March 7, 1912,	194,482.21
March 7, 1913,	225,929.31
March 7, 1914,	246,634.97
March 7, 1915,	254,625.42
March 7, 1916,	293,862.47

Fresh Stock of

DRUGS, CANDIES, and SUNDRIES always on hand. STATIONERY, BLANK BOOKS, SCHOOL BOOKS & SCHOOL SUPPLIES : : : : : :

PRESCRIPTIONS CAREFULLY & SCIENTIFICALLY COMPOUNDED

Your Orders Will Be Appreciated

Franklin Drug Company,

ROCKY MOUNT, VA.

Do You Love Money?

We pay Cash for Chickens, Hens and Eggs. Bring your trade to us for best prices.

Walker, Wigington & Co., THE CASH STORE

ROCKY MOUNT, VA.

YOU HAVE TRIED THE REST
NOW USE THE BEST

DAVIS 2-4-1 PAINT

For Sale By
J. N. MONTGOMERY & CO.
Rocky Mount, Va.

Yesterday In The Black Community

Gloria Woods and Mary Hopkins

In our 200 years as a county, a large percentage of the black population spent the first 77 years in slavery. Most of their achievements went unnoticed and unrecorded. There were no accurate records to recognize or document the impact that the slaves made in terms of the growth and history of Franklin County. Early census records revealed information relative to age, sex, and literacy of free blacks. Also included was the value of their real property, personal property, and the names of the head of each household.

Because of the limited amount of recorded facts, much of the information and history collected here has been provided through memories of relatives, old family Bibles, receipts, and newspaper clippings. This story of Franklin County blacks from 1786 to 1950 narrates some of the accomplishments of the black community in Franklin County.

One of the present-day black Baptist churches, the Carolina Springs Baptist Church, is not only one of the oldest churches in the county, it may very well be a historical landmark as based on the following bits of information. A newspaper article reported that all available evidence points to the location of an old church abandoned by the Church of England in 1769. In an early provision of the vestry of Camden Parish, the vestry proposed "Chappell of Ease ordered to be built near John Wilcox's place." Later the vestry changed the order to read "at the most convenient spring near the Cross Roads called the Carolina and Chiswell Roads." The location bears out the order of its original structure and name.

Truevine Church, organized in 1873 by the Reverend Sam Davis and a group of lodge brothers known as the True Friends, is the oldest black Missionary Baptist church in the county.

First Baptist Church, of Patterson Avenue, was formed July 26, 1899. Its first church building was a log cabin and Foster Saunders, William Walker, Salmus Willis, William Dabney, and James Brown served as trustees. The log cabin burned shortly before the congregation began meeting in a new structure on Franklin Street. The huge bell hanging in the cupola in the building on Franklin Street has been examined by several qualified people and most have declared it to be a sister to the Liberty Bell. The bell was rung for many years by Dan Sheffey. Another new building used by the First Baptist Congregation is located on Patterson Avenue.

Roy George, father of Henry George, and one of his brothers ran away with the Yankees during the Civil War and settled in Giles County with German Baptists until the war was over. After the war, Henry George married Sally Boon from Roanoke County. Her father's slave master was a Boon from Franklin County. In the fall of 1865 when her father became a free man, he went back to Roanoke County. His granddaughter Zenobia Ashville, who provided this information about her family history, lives in Roanoke County. Mrs. Ashville was one of the early black teachers of Franklin County. She taught for many years in this county at the following schools: the Phelps School, beginning in 1919; the Hay Run School in 1943; Ferrum School for Negroes; and the Fairmont School. Her last teaching assignments was at Truevine Elementary School, which closed in 1981.

Blacks of Franklin County demonstrated that they were skilled workers and could purchase land and operate businesses. Jack Hopkins, born in 1858, married Ollie ("Aunt Ollie") Warren in 1882. With her father, Stephen Warren, Hopkins purchased a lot in Rocky Mount for $150.00 on February 8, 1884, and started a lucrative restaurant and boarding house business. This business seems to have been well established by 1900 and catered primarily to whites.

In 1893, Hopkins purchased thirty-six acres of land on Gap Branch valued at $81. In 1905 he bought three additional acres of land in Rocky Mount and used part of the land to start his livery stable in which shoppers and visitors could leave their horses and gear when in town. Jack and Ollie Hopkins's daughter, Minnie Watson Moorman, was a school teacher for twenty years. She went on to become a supervisor for thirty years.

Lewis Muse and Toby Basham were some of the earliest blacksmiths in the town of Rocky Mount. Basham's son William T. continued his father's tradition for many more years. Robert Trupane Reeves, born January 1, 1870, to Armistead and Queen Victoria Muse Reeves, had a thriving blacksmith business in the southeastern part of the county at Truevine. He learned the trade while working in the shops of the coal mines in West Virginia. He came back to Franklin County to farm and later opened his shop. His business attracted customers from Pittsylvania and other surrounding counties. The story has it that he spent so

Brooks and Company was a well known establishment on Main Street at the present site of United Virginia Bank. Shown here are: (l. to r.) Ira Phelps, Earnest Holland, owner Lee M. Waid and Sam Phelps.

many hours a day beating metals into shapes and forms that "his body formed into the stooped position of his trade."

Reeves married Rosie Nell Hopkins, daughter of Zack and Linnie Hopkins, on December 27, 1899. They had twelve children. She was a midwife, and according to her records, she delivered more than 500 babies, both black and white. She died in March 1951 and her husband followed in August 1958. Alexander J. ("A.J.") Reeves, one of their twelve children, presently resides in the county; he is a retired plumber.

Lee Burrell Smith, also a plumber, was born January 25, 1884, son of Victoria Smith. He began working in the plumbing section of Montgomery Hardware Store and when the store closed he started his own business in 1936. He drove a Model A Ford to serve his customers. Smith married Nannie Lumsden on May 7, 1910. They had eight children. Their son John Lee continued the family plumbing trade until his death in 1982. One of the Smiths' daughters, Burnett Brooks, is a beautician. She was among the first of her race to open a beauty parlor for blacks.

Jack Muse, Morgan Dickerson, Raymond Thomas, and Terry Poindexter were forerunners in the trade of barbering.

Charlie Tyree, son of Lewis and Agnes Tyree, operated a country store on Route 619. He lived to be almost one hundred years old.

Jimmy Boothe, an electrician, wired many houses during the early '40s, after the Rural Electrification Act of 1936. He learned the trade in West Virginia.

In the early 1900s, blacks operated many restaurants and cafes in the town of Rocky Mount. Elizabeth Howard and Laura Jane ("Aunt Jennie") Tinsley were two ladies known to have been proprietors of restaurants during that period. Aunt Jennie was born in 1845 and lived to be almost one hundred years old. She was married to William Thomas, a carpenter.

Sam Phelps, the son of Claiborne Phelps and the grandson of a slave, became one of the leading merchants in Rocky Mount. After earning his college degree at the age of twenty-two, he taught in Giles and Franklin counties for a total of four years. In 1913, he formed a partnership with Filmore Brooks and Lee Waid, local merchants. Phelps and Waid continued to operate the business as Brooks and Company on Main Street until they sold their store to Bankers Trust Company in 1958. The partnership also purchased other real estate not limited to the store.

An active religious and community leader, Phelps was a deacon at the First Baptist Church for more than forty years. He served as president of the local NAACP and the PTA for twenty years. He was also one of the founders of the Boy Scout program for blacks in Franklin County and an executive member of the Boy Scouts Algonquin District for many years. He married Maude Waid, December 26, 1914, and had five children. She died June 20, 1936. Later he married Ira Scott, of Bluefield, West Virginia. His only son, Samuel Waid Phelps, became the first black to be elected to the Rocky Mount Town Council (1970), a post which he held until his death in 1985.

The council appointed Waid's widow, Dorothy Drewery, to complete his unexpired term. Phelp's son, Waid, continued his father's legacy of achievement by owning and operating Midway Cleaners for thirty-five years.

Lee Melon Waid was born March 4, 1878, in the Sontag Community. He grew up on a farm and went to the coalfields of West Virginia as a laborer. Upon his return from the coalfields, he worked as a clerk in the flourishing Brooks and Company general mercantile store and later became part-owner of the store with Sam Phelps. He also contributed a great deal of his time, efforts, and resources toward trying to make Franklin County a better place to live. On October 11, 1955, Waid was honored by his fellow citizens when the new wing of Franklin Memorial Hospital was named for him. Regrettably, at this time, the wing on the hospital no longer bears his name. Records of his life portrays him as an embodiment of honest work, service to his fellowman, his community, and his God. He died in January 1956 and eleven months later the citizens honored him by naming Franklin County Training School the Lee Melon Waid High School.

Posey Dunning, son of Crozer and Della Patterson, started a taxi business in the early '20s using a Model T as his first taxi. Grant Poindexter, Earnest and Lacy Holland, along with Coy Board, followed later in the business. John Cooper was the last member of his race to operate a privately owned taxi business, now a franchise arrangement.

Two streets in the town of Rocky Mount are named for blacks. Patterson Avenue was name for Wade Patterson, a mail carrier. Warren Street was named for Aunt Ollie Hopkin's parents.

Dave Holland was a mail carrier in the Coles Creek section.

In the early 1900s George Wade operated a dairy in Rocky Mount. A man with homespun philosophy, he sold his dairy in 1922 to Doc Williams, a white man, for $400. Being the affable, jovial man that he was, Wade promptly started a garbage collection business.

May Roy Tyree Saunders, born March 27, 1893, was a church organist at Bethel AME Church, and sold "Florida Fashions" dresses and beauty aids.

In the early 1940s, William Snead opened the first mortuary for blacks. Prior to his business's opening, whites had handled all funerals in the county.

Dr. John Henry Pinkard, son of Sam and Sarah Pinkard, was born in Franklin County in 1865. The family was poor. At the age of eleven, of his own volition and against the protest of his mother, John became the main support of the family. At age fifteen he was found working for the Norfolk and Western Railroad Company as a water boy. "After a few months having learned how to read on the stakes the figures indicating the required grades, young John was given twelve men to boss in a dirt cut at $2.75 a day." At the age of eighteen he purchased an eighty-eight-acre farm for his family. They lost the farm because of a defective title. Instead of pining over his reversed fortunes, he set out to win his way in the world. He entered West Penn University and pursued a course in medicine. He practiced ten years in Pittsburgh before returning home. Here he began to manufacture botanical remedies that eventually made him rich and famous.

But first, he experienced another set back. This time it came as a result of putting his products for sale with a white wholesale and retail druggist. He later moved to Roanoke and began making, handling, and prescribing his own remedies. His practice enjoyed phenomenal growth and success. Sales from his remedies averaged between $1,000 and $1,500 a week. His records for 1919 revealed that he had black and white patients from at least fifteen states and the District of Columbia.

The following is one of Pinkard's famous remedies:

Pinkard's Great Liniment

In many cases it relieves pain in from three to ten minutes. If you have rheumatism or neuralgia, in fact any pain about the body, you should, by all means, try this wonderful Liniment. Put up in 25¢ and 50¢ sizes. □

GLORIA TYREE WOODS, *a native of Franklin County, is a third-grade teacher at Snow Creek Elementary School.*

MARY GEORGE HOPKINS, *a resident of Franklin County, is vice-president of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission, a member of the Franklin County Historical Society, and librarian at the Franklin County Middle School.*

Franklin County In War And Peace

Michael R. Grimm

The record of participation by Franklin County residents in the defense of their country is in itself like a history of these United States. Although sometimes appearing of a passive nature, the men of this region have, for over two hundred years, been some of the first to lay down their tools of trade, leave their families and come to the aid of their country. Even before the formation of the county itself, they did their part in defending this land from both domestic and foreign intruders. The ancestors of many county residents of today participated in military engagements that shaped the destiny of the country they loved.

Possibly the earliest involvement by county inhabitants occurred during the French and Indian War. This is evident in the lists of colonial militia from September 1758 in which names such as Jeremiah Early, Joseph Rentfro, James Callaway and others appear in a Bedford County unit. Many other names of later county residents also appear in a Lunenbury County Militia from that same year.

The hostilities of the Indians in western Virginia during the mid-1700s necessitated the maintenance of a local guard by the individual communities. By the year 1774 the Shawnee, Delaware, Mingoes, Ottawas and other Indian nations formed a confederation of tribes whose depredations and other bloody deeds along the Ohio River and the Allegheny Mountains had the pioneer settlers up in arms. The governor of Virginia at that time was James Murray, the Fourth Earl of Dunmore and for him the series of events that occurred that year became known as Lord Dunmore's War. On October 10 that year, a violent battle occurred at Point Pleasant (now West Virginia) between these united Indian tribes and militiamen from several western Virginia counties. Included in the list of volunteers were Franklin County inhabitants Robert Hill and Thomas Hall, who served in a company from Bedford County.

The Battle of Point Pleasant and Dunmore's War marked the end of an era, for it was the last war in which Americans would fight under the British flag. Within a few short months the Indian fighters would be engaged in a revolutionary war with their mother country. The men of this region were among the first to take the oath of allegiance to this newly formed country, the United States. The militia formed would include all free white males between eighteen and fifty years of age.

Residents of both Bedford and Henry counties, parts of which would later make up Franklin, were known to have participated in many of the more famous battles and skirmishes of the Revolution. The records of service indicate as many as one hundred fifty men from Franklin County did their part in establishing the nation's independence. Some of those who served this new country so well were men like Peter Angle, John Law, Abraham Abshire, Benjamin Wray, Philemon Saunders and Walter Bernard, just to name a few. Sylvester Beverly, colored, originally from Buckingham County and William Cuff, a free man of color, both settled here after the war. Many Franklin County families of that period were split by their loyalty to the Crown and their desire for independence and for that reason many brothers would disown one another. For religious reasons, others of the county would not fight in the war against Britain. Instead, they would in many instances provide provisions to the Continental Army, therefore performing a patriotic duty for which the nation was grateful.

From 1783 and the end of the American Revolution until 1812, there was peace between the newly formed nation and Britain, but there still remained a need for a militia ready at a moment's notice to defend the country. The Franklin County militia at that time was commanded by Colonel Hugh Innes and later Thomas Arthur, and included many of the same men who had served in the Revolution. At one point in 1793 an artillery company was formed under Captain James Callaway as part of the defense, but it is believed they never really received any artillery weapons for this unit.

The War of 1812 would bring these men together again. From every village, hollow, and Blue Ridge mountaintop in Franklin County, they came, ready for duty on both land and sea. Many of them were prominent figures of the communities in which they lived. The names include John M. Holland, William R. Divers, John Crum, Jacob Kesler, and William Hale. Linus and Zadok Bernard, sons of Walter Bernard the revolutionary soldier and grandsons of Robert Hill of Dunmore's War, both served in the War of 1812. Linus was believed killed, but Zadok eventually returned to Franklin County and resumed his place in the community.

The Mexican War of 1846 was brought about in an effort to secure the area of the frontier we know today as California, Arizona, New Mexico, and Texas. By this time Franklin County and Rocky Mount had developed into a bustling industrial and agricultural community as had much of the nation. But as before, when the need arose, the county provided its share of volunteers. One such man was a young Rocky Mount lawyer named Jubal A. Early, who attained the rank of major and served in Company F of the 1st Virginia Volunteers.

As history repeats itself, so often county

World War I parade in downtown Rocky Mount.

residents would serve in more than one war. This too was true with Jubal Early who would sign the Virginia Ordinance of Secession that formally placed the state of Virginia in the Civil War. The forming of companies of volunteers and the necessary training of the men during the rebellion was accomplished in record time, though not as efficiently as what might be directed today. Muster grounds were located at various sections of the county where the troops received almost constant drilling. The companies that were organized contained men from neighboring counties as well as Franklin. When they left their homes and families, as had their fathers and grandfathers before them, they had hopes of a swift reunion.

This would not happen during the four long years that followed. Virtually every man of fighting age would serve and fight against the government their forefathers had so gallantly fought for. For the first time black men were drafted from Franklin County to serve the confederacy, entering the service as slaves and returning as free men. When the Civil War was over the men and boys of Franklin County came home to their loved ones and eventually reestablished their loyalty to the United States.

For over three decades peace would permit the descendants of the early Indian fighters to strive to achieve a lifestyle comparable, though markedly different, from that they had known before the Civil War. Then, in 1898 many of the sons of the gallant Confederate soldiers would participate in a conflict commonly known as the Spanish-American War. Franklin County men, such as Charles Henry Hancock and Beverly T. Bernard, were among those who fought under commanders like Teddy Roosevelt.

When the United States next went to war it was 1917 and this time against Germany. The first troops left Franklin County on September 21 of that year. General Meriwether Lewis Walker, who later became the governor general of Panama, was the ranking officer from Franklin County, but there were many other outstanding participants as well. The county furnished 591 soldiers during the war, of which 98 were blacks. Their tours of duty would take them to many of the major confrontations of the First World War, including the battles of Belleau Wood and Verdun. Many were highly decorated for their heroic service and many never returned to their home land again, but were buried where they fought and died. Still others were brought home to be interred in family cemeteries that included old soldiers from long-ago wars.

Joe Law (l) and Peter C. Law (r) of the Co. G, 57th Va. Infantry.

John Nickols of Callaway (seated in center front with pipe) fought in the Spainish-American War and traveled all over the world during his twenty years in the Army.

When the war was over and the veterans of Franklin County returned, they were the first to form an American Legion Post in Virginia. It is believed this post was possibly the second formed in the United States.

With the outbreak of the Second World War and the need for American troops on opposite sides of the globe, there was an even stronger show of support from the men and women of Franklin County. The records indicate as many as 1,557 native sons and daughters participated in some manner in this war. On the European front they saw action at Normandy and in Italy, Holland, Luxembourg, Germany, and Belgium. In the Pacific Theatre, they witnessed the atrocities of war at Luzon Island, Guadalcanal, and Okinawa.

As with virtually every other war county residents had taken part in, many would be killed in the line of duty. At least sixty-four Franklin County men and women would die on the fields of battle in these faraway lands. Many of them remained there in national cemeteries set aside for Americans who had fallen.

The next involvement of Franklin County soldiers was in Korea and following that, there was Vietnam. The United States participation in these areas was referred to as peace-keeping activities or police actions, but the truth is they were both just as much wars as any of the others. Most of those who took part in these two wars are still an active part of our communities. They have for the most part reclaimed their lives. Their numbers are many and to mention names is not necessary, for we know who they are and respect them greatly, as we respect all those who have served in all the wars since our country began.

As Franklin County celebrates its two hundredth birthday, we think back on all the patriotic men and women who served so courageously and we are forever indebted. Our nation today is currently not engaged in military activities that endanger the lives of our young adults, but that is not to say they are unready. Like the colonial militia of 1758, the Virginia National Guardsmen of today are the modern-day Minutemen. Detachment 1, Company B, 2nd Battalion, 116th Infantry, "Stonewall Brigade," today is located in Rocky Mount. The men of this unit, as their ancestors before them, are ready to perform their duty in the defense of Franklin County and the United States. Ironically, the National Guard Armory in Rocky Mount is located adjacent to a small cemetery that contains the remains of many aforementioned county heroes. Colonial soldiers Robert and Thomas Hill are buried there along with Walter Bernard and so many others to whom we owe so much. □

MICHAEL GRIMM, *a native of the state of Washington and a descendant of Virginia Blue Ridge pioneers who migrated west in the early 1800s, now lives in Franklin County and is a forensic scientist in fingerprint identification for the commonwealth of Virginia. Mr. Grimm is an avid historian and vice-president of the Franklin County Historical Society.*

The Land Between The Lakes — Philpott and Smith Mountain Lakes

Eric H. Ferguson

The large lakes that now occupy great areas of land on the northeast and southwest boundaries of Franklin County have not always been in existence. Consequently, the county has not always been known as The Land Between The Lakes. The construction of Philpott and Smith Mountain Lakes in the 1950s and 1960s changed the geographical layout of Franklin County and contributed to the history of the region.

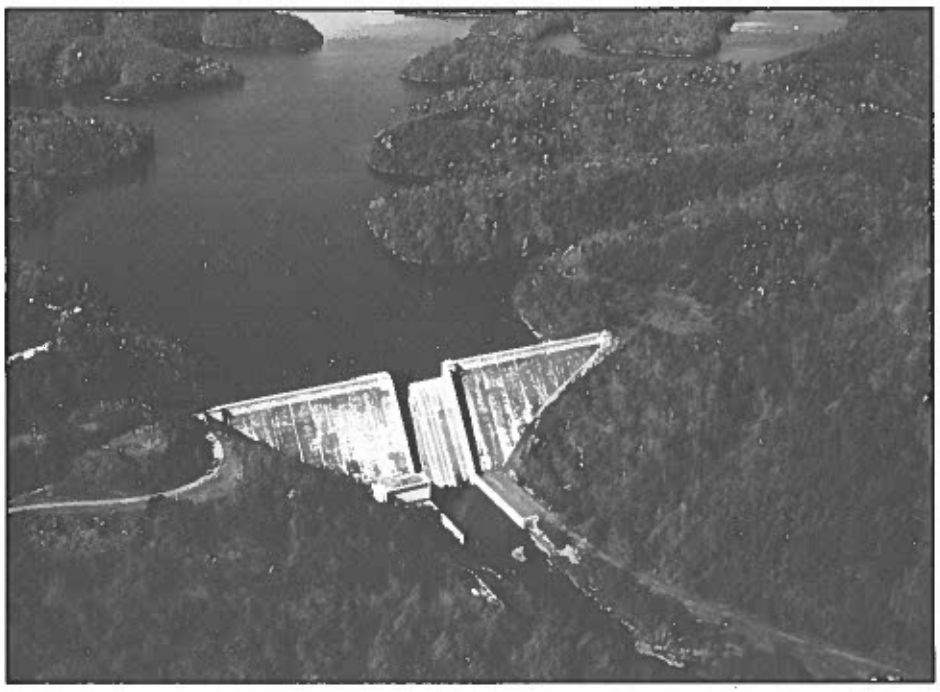
Although the lakes have grown to play a major role in the lifestyles of the people who live in Franklin County and surrounding counties over the last thirty-five years, their sources played a major role in the creation and development of Franklin County. The Smith (Irvine) River and its tributaries were the source of Philpott Lake, and the Roanoke (Staunton) River and its tributaries, including the Blackwater River, were the source of Smith Mountain Lake. These rivers were vital in the establishment of boundary lines for Franklin County at the time of its creation.

On May 24, 1779, residents of Bedford County living on the south side of the Staunton River petitioned the Virginia General Assembly for a new county. Their desire for a new county was based on the difficulty of crossing the Staunton River and its tributaries in order to get to the county seat of Bedford. Most of the inhabitants on the south side of the river lived fifty miles from the county seat. On the same day, inhabitants of Henry County living on the north side of the Irvine River joined with the Bedford citizens in their petition for a new county. Thomas Watts, Peter Wood, Peter Holland and Aquilla Greer were among the petitioners in 1779. These petitions were opposed by those citizens who did not want the two counties divided. On November 9, 1779, Thomas Arthur, Thomas Doggett, William Wright, John Underwood, and others also petitioned for the county.

Unfortunately, these early petitioners were unsuccessful in gaining the Virginia legislature's approval. Thus Bedford and Henry County citizens continued to petition the legislature for several more years. They complained that they were thirty to sixty miles from their county seats, tax assessors could not do their jobs properly,and it was difficult to transport grain to those places assigned by the legislature. In June 1782, Henry County residents petitioned again, as did Bedford citizens. They asserted that the new county would have between six hundred and twelve hundred tithables (taxpayers).

The efforts of the disgruntled citizens failed, yet they continued to petition the legislature throughout 1782, 1783, and 1784. Finally, in the fall of 1785, Thomas Arthur, Moses Greer, George Doggett, William Miller, and 338 other Bedford citizens on the south side of the Staunton River signed another petition for a new county. Citizens of Henry County presented two petitions containing over seventeen hundred signatures. They desired a new county be formed from that portion of Henry County lying north of the Irvine River and that portion of Bedford County lying south of the Staunton River.

In November 1786, the Virginia General Assembly approved the formation of Franklin County. It was indeed The Land Between the Rivers. Those rivers were to continue to play an important role in the development of Franklin County in the years ahead.



Philpott Lake with its 100 mile wooded shoreline and secluded coves provides an idyllic setting for the sportsman and vacationer.

Philpott Lake

The Philpott Reservoir and Dam, named for a small village in Henry County, originated as part of a flood control project of the United States Army Corps of Engineers. The corps began to study the Roanoke River Basin in 1927 for flood control. The need for the project was strengthened by a great flood in the Smith River Valley in October 1937. In the 1937 flood, 3,500 workers were affected and 1,550 inhabitants were forced to evacuate their homes. Over $600,000 in damage was done to industrial and commercial establishments and homes along the Smith River.

The U.S. Congress authorized the construction of the Philpott Reservoir and Dam in the Flood Control Act of 1944 (Public Law 534, 78th Congress, 2d Session, December 22, 1944). The project was part of an overall plan for the entire Roanoke River Basin, which also included the Buggs Island Reservoir. The Philpott Project was to cover land originally owned by the Turners (1746), Prillamans (1770), Fergusons (1779), Handys (1780), Sneeds (1787), and many others.

Actual construction on the project began in March 1948 and completed in October 1953. Upon completion, the dam was 892 feet long and 220 feet high, containing 320,000 cubic yards of concrete. The entire project cost $13,450,000.

The Philpott Project was intended for flood control but is also used for the generation of hydroelectric power. Upon completion, the powerhouse at the dam contained three turbines and generators, which were

Smith Mountain Lake with its 500 mile shoreline, (60% in Franklin County) unlimited water sports and recreational opportunities, resort complexes, golf courses, and planned residential communities offers unexcelled opportunities for living in Franklin County.

powered by the water stored behind the dam. The system was capable of generating 14,000 kilowatts of electricity. The sale of this electricity helps pay the government for building and operating the dam.

Philpott Lake covers 2,880 acres and is three quarters of a mile wide. The lake is 14 miles long and has 100 miles of shoreline (not all in Franklin County). The U.S. government owns 7,000 acres surrounding the lake, which are used for wildlife preservation, agriculture, and recreation. The shoreline is dotted with marinas, campgrounds, picnic shelters, and public swimming areas.

The ability of Philpott Lake to store large amounts of water from rain and other sources such as Runnett Bag Creek, Otter Creek and Butter Run has protected the area from potentially dangerous rainfalls. While protecting the area from the awesome force of nature, its peaceful, undisturbed coves accentuate nature's beauty and the solitude found in Franklin County.

Smith Mountain Lake

Although it is younger than Philpott Lake, the much larger Smith Mountain lake stretches along Franklin County's northeastern border. Unlike Philpott Lake, Smith Mountain Lake and Dam was intended solely for the production of hydroelectric power. The location of the dam, on lands once hunted by the Cherokee, Tutelo, and Saponi Indians, has been described as a "geographical and hydrological oddity" because of the seven-mile-long Smith Mountain and its surrounding lower countryside.

The Smith Mountain Project had been considered since 1924, but it was not until the 1960s that it became a reality. Appalachian Power Company acquired the land for the dam site in 1954 from the Roanoke-Staunton River Power Company. The land that was to be flooded by the construction of the dam had first been explored by John Lederer in 1670 and by the trio of Thomas Wood, Thomas Batts, and Robert Fallam in 1671. These explorers did not settle in the area and it was not until the mid-1700s that settlers began to move westward towards the Blue Ridge Mountains. The Smith Mountain Project bears the name of the mountain that honors two brothers: Daniel and Gideon Smith. The Smiths were among the first settlers to arrive in the area in 1740. Other early settlers were Reuben Stanley (1762), John Haynes (1777), and Joseph Greer (1782).

The concept of pumped storage hydroelectric power production is utilized by Appalachian Power Company at Smith Mountain Lake. In 1960, construction was begun on a dam that was to be 227 feet high and 816 feet long. The dam was completed in 1966 at a cost of approximately $66 million and a fifth generating unit was added in 1979 at a cost of more than $37 million. The water stored behind the dam goes through the turbine generators to produce 560,000 kilowatts of electricity. It is then caught in the Leesville Lake (downstream) where at nighttime and on weekends it is pumped back upstream through three turbines at Smith Mountain into Smith Mountain Lake to be used again.

The dam backs up water for forty miles, covering 20,600 acres with a shoreline of approximately 500 miles in four different counties. Smith Mountain Lake is the largest manmade lake totally within the borders of Virginia. It has become a recreational haven for thousands of people coming from all parts of the United States, in addition to providing electricity to thousands of users. The area's economic growth has given the lake a cosmopolitan atmosphere resulting in modern homes, condominiums, and marinas dotting the shoreline for miles, while preserving Franklin County's natural beauty.

The bodies of water that once denied the residents of Bedford and Henry counties access to their county seats and hindered them in various other ways led them to form a new county. The descendants of those early Franklin County settlers are now able to enjoy the water courses that seemingly surround them. The well-maintained natural beauty of Philpott Lake and the cosmopolitan growth of Smith Mountain lake have contribued to the evolution of Franklin County's waterways from a hindrance to a source of pleasure and fulfillment. Franklin County is no longer a land between two wild rivers but a Land Between The Lakes. □

ERIC H. FERGUSON, *a native of the Snow Creek community with many ancestors predating the formation of Franklin County, graduated from the University of Virginia in 1984 and is at present a student at the T.C. Williams School of Law of the University of Richmond. Mr. Ferguson is an avid student of American, Virginia, and local history.*

Franklin County Today - 1986

Marshall L. Flora

Industry

Although declining in relative importance, agriculture is still considered a basic industry in Franklin County, accounting for approximately twenty percent of the county's work force.

Manufacturing has taken the commanding role in Franklin County's economic growth pattern since 1960. There are presently thirty manufacturing firms in Franklin County, employing approximately forty-five hundred people. The annual payroll exceeds $64 million.

Wood-related products and textiles dominate the list of manufacturers. The major wood products include furniture, modular homes, wooden windows, and frames for pictures and mirrors. The predominant textiles made in Franklin County are sportswear, uniforms, sheets, and synthetic wearing apparel. County manufacturers also produce paint, mirrors, and fabricated steel.

Fire and Rescue Squads

The county is served by nine volunteer fire departments. Approximately two hundred seventy-five trained volunteer firemen operate the nine pumper-tanker companies.

Rescue service is provided by eight squads comprising approximately two hundred fifty volunteer workers. These squads are equipped with twenty ambulances and four crash trucks.

Medical Services

Franklin Memorial Hospital, located in the town of Rocky Mount, is a sixty-two-bed, community health care center staffed and equipped to provide general medical, surgical, nursing, and emergency care for all persons.

There is a total of eight medical clinics located throughout the town and county, staffed by more than twenty physicians. The Franklin County Health Department provides various medically related services for the community.

Three nursing homes in the town and county give shelter to and intermediate care for adults of all ages.

Education

The Franklin County public school system serves the residents of Franklin County, the town of Rocky Mount, and the town of Boones Mill, with 3,260 students attending eleven elementary schools; 1,150 students attending the middle school; 1,843 attending the high school; and 106 students attending a special education center. There are 6,330 students in the public school system.

The system also offers the Adult Basic Education Program and vocational education courses are conducted at the Vocational Center on the high school campus.

Three private schools are located in the county.

Ferrum College, with an enrollment of approximately 1,400 students, offers both associate and bachelor's degrees. Majors are offered in twenty-five fields of study.

Libraries

Franklin County is served by two libraries: the Franklin County Public Library in Rocky Mount and the Stanley Library at Ferrum College.

The old Franklin County Library located adjacent to the courthouse, which contains approximately thirty thousand volumes, will be replaced by a new building. The 9,600-square-foot, single-story structure, capable of holding seventy-five to eighty thousand volumes, is being constructed three lots below the old building on East Court Street. It is appropriate that the new library will be dedicated during the Bicentennial Year, 1986.

Services include a story hour for young children, Saturday programs for older children, a summer reading program, reference service outreach to nursing homes, a bookmobile, interlibrary loan for all Virginia public libraries, a photocopier, and a video film reader. The library makes regular and timely additions to its collection and provides professional assistance to county citizens.

The Stanley Library is located at Ferrum College and is open for public use by Franklin County citizens. The Ferrum collection contains about eighty thousand volumes.

County Government

Franklin County Government:

Franklin County, the seventh largest in area in Virginia, operates under a board of supervisors-county administrator form of government. The county is divided into seven electoral districts, each of which is represented by a supervisor elected to serve a four-year term on the Board of Supervisors. The board has control over local taxation, budgets, borrowing, general county policy, and adoption of local ordinances.

The county administrator is employed by and serves at the pleasure of the Board of

Burroughs Corporation, located on the north end of town, employs 155 people full time. This printing facility opened in early 1976 and features state-of-the-art production equipment.

Supervisors. The administrator oversees the day-to-day business operations of the county government and serves as advisor and clerk to the Board of Supervisors. Among the public services operated by the county are the Senior Citizen's Center, the Franklin County Public Library and the Parks and Recreation Department. All other traditional services are also funded by the county: including education, social services, law enforcement, records, judicial system, elections, and extension service programs.

Local residents serve on the School Board, Planning Commission, Social Services Board, Recreation Commission, Transportation Safety Commission, Electoral Board, and the Industrial Development Authority.

The treasurer, commonwealth's attorney, sheriff, commissioner of the revenue, and circuit court clerk are constitutional officers, elected by the voters. The School Board is appointed by the School Trustee Electoral Board and does not have taxing powers.

In 1985, Franklin County had an annual budget in excess of $21.2 million. Approximately 75 percent of that amount was appropriated for the operation and maintenance of the school system.

Total bond indebtedness of the county amounts to approximately $6,536,200, which was incurred for school construction.

Religions

There are approximately one hundred twenty Protestant churches in the county, representing most major denominations. One Roman Catholic congregation has recently been organized and property has been purchased for the construction of a worship center. These churches serve as centers of family life for a majority of the area's residents.

Public Utilities

The Appalachian Power Company provides electrical service to Franklin County.

The town of Rocky Mount has just completed a new water treatment plant on the Blackwater River with a daily capacity of 2 million gallons. There is also a storage capacity of 2.7 million gallons. Present average daily use is 835,000 gallons per day. In addition, Rocky Mount has a sewage treatment plant with a capacity of 800,000 gallons per day.

Both Ferrum College and the community are served by the Water and Sewer Authority.

The town of Boones Mill is provided with water from private springs. Plans for a public sewage system are presently being developed.

Franklin County's third courthouse on this site was erected in 1909 and dedicated in 1913.

Franklin County owns and operates a central landfill. A green box trash collection system is maintained throughout the entire county.

The Norfolk Southern Railway system provides freight service through the county. No railroad passenger service is available.

Natural gas is not available in the county. The Roanoke Gas Company holds an option to provide such service when considered feasible.

Civic Clubs

The Franklin County-Rocky Mount area has over seventy-five clubs and organizations including all major civic, service and veteran's organizations and auxiliaries for both men and women. It would be impossible to estimate the many hours of service provided by these volunteer groups toward the betterment of our community.

Recreation

Franklin County, bounded on the east by the 20,600-acre Smith Mountain Lake and on the west by the 2,880-acre Philpott Lake, offers the best in all water sports and recreation.

The Franklin County Parks and Recreation Department provides a number of organized sports and recreational activities. A 150-acre recreation park in the county and two smaller playgrounds in town include tennis courts, basketball, volleyball, horseshoes, amphitheater, picnic shelters, and baseball fields. Two golf courses are located in the community, and hunting opportunities abound.

County recreation is supplemented by the many spectator sports and other cultural and entertainment activities taking place throughout the year at Ferrum College.

The Franklin County Chamber of Commerce

The Franklin County Chamber of Commerce was organized and officially chartered as a non-profit organization in October 1963. A few leaders of the community saw the need for an active organization to promote the economic development of the town and county. From this humble beginning, the chamber has remained active with a full-time staff and now is composed of approximately four hundred members, with an annual budget of $45,000.

During the past eighteen years the chamber has played a major role in the location of fourteen industries and many fine businesses within the community.

More then seventy-five volunteers continually serve the committees within the chamber structure in the organization and promotion of developmental activities. □

MARSHALL L. FLORA, *is a native of Franklin County, having been born and presently residing in the Boones Mill community. Mr. Flora has served as executive director of the Franklin County Chamber of Commerce for the past eighteen years where he has rendered outstanding service to his native county. He is a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

The Franklin County Bicentennial Driving Tour

Jeanne Bernard

The Bicentennial Driving Tour of Franklin County is designed to allow you to travel throughout the county and glimpse the history evident in the old homes and treasured landmarks as well as to view the beautiful rural scenery. The tour is organized for easy viewing from the routes suggested. Many places of interest cannot be included because of poor access. Although all roads on the tour are paved, some are narrow and winding and should be driven with caution and at a reasonable rate of speed.

Those places open to the public are so indicated: **all other sites are private property and must not be disturbed.** The sites marked * will be open to the public on May 17 and 18, 1986. The sites marked + will be open September 27 and 28, 1986. The tour can be started from any point. Being quite long, it is recommended the tour be traveled in sections for full enjoyment. A county highway map would be helpful.

The continuous tour route starts at the Franklin-Roanoke County line on the northern end of Franklin County. Take Route 220 South, ½ mile south of the county line, turn at the first hard surface road to the right on Route 613, go .2 miles on the left.

* **The Old Homestead** - A brick Federal residence built circa 1820 by John Boon (later spelled Boone), son of Jacob Boon, one of the founders of Boones Mill. Originally the home consisted of two brick structures, the main house and the kitchen, now joined by a clapboard addition. It once served as a stagecoach stop on the Carolina Road, midway between Rocky Mount and Big Lick (Roanoke).

A few yards from the entrance to this home on the left, turn on Route 614 and travel approximately 0.2 miles where on the right is the

* **Boon-Price Cemetery** - Surrounded by a clump of trees, two graveyards enclosed by ornamental iron fences contain the burial places of many of the Boons and Prices. John Boon (1783-1853) and his wife, Susan Fowler Boon (1793-1857) are buried here.

Turn around, retrace on Route 614 to Route 613; turn left, go 0.3 miles on the right.

* **Guild Hall** - Later known as the Price Place, a two-story Flemish bond brick residence. The four front rooms were built prior to 1823; the two back rooms were added later. The builder is unknown.

From this vantage point, one may view Cahas Knob. In 1747, William McKaehay took up 200 acres at the foot of the mountain where the path comes over it on Maggodee Creek. This is the area of the present Occanneechi Apple Production Corporation.

Turn around and return to Route 220. Turn right and head south toward Boones Mill.

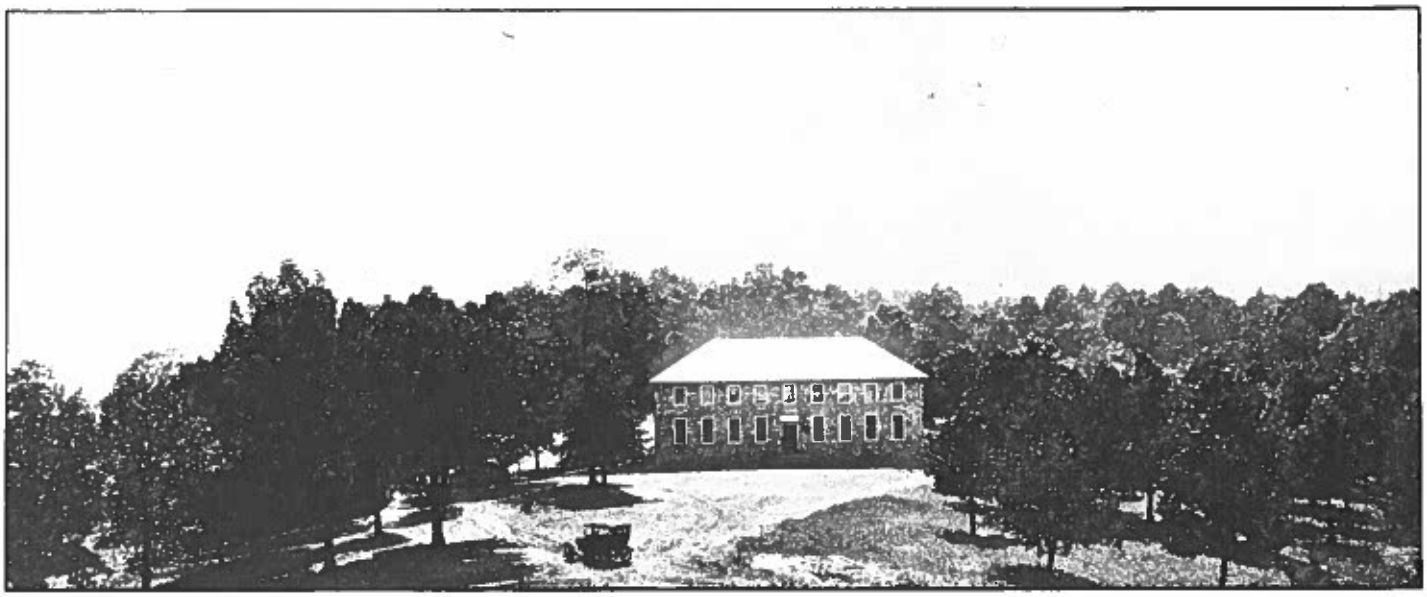
You are now traveling the original route of the historic **Carolina Road**, the Great Wagon Road from Philadephia to Georgia. Here it broke through the Blue Ridge at the Maggodee Gap to run southward east of the mountains. Before 1744 it had been used for centuries as the Great Warrior Path by the Iroquois from upstate New York to Georgia. It was extensively used by the Cherokee, the Iroquois, George Washington, Andrew Jackson, and pioneers of every description on foot, horseback, and Conestoga wagons. It became the most heavily traveled road in all colonial America.

Boones Mill - In the village of Boones Mill, the old Jacob Boon mill once stood on Maggodee Creek where Ruff's Antique Shop is now located.

Past this point, turn left in the village, cross the bridge to Route 1601 and proceed to the end of the street.

* **Jacob Boon House** - The main structure was built in 1782 by miller Jacob Boon. The front section is constructed of chestnut logs with mud chinking, now covered with clapboard. The foundation is rock as is the original chimney. Daniel Boone is believed to have visited his cousin Jacob here when traveling through Virginia to and from Kentucky.

Return to Route 220, turn left to a point in the village just behind the Boones Mill Christian Church on Route 1606.



The Phoebe Needles Conference Center (owned and operated by the Episcopal Diocese of Southwestern Virginia) was once Saint Peter's Mission School.

Old Abshire Home - Built by brothers Jacob and Peter Boon in the late 1700s, it is a log-body structure with the rafters mortised and pinioned. It is now covered with poplar siding, and is said to have been a stagecoach stop in its earlier years.

Continue south on Route 220 beyond Boones Mill about ½ mile. Turn right on Route 919, 1.8 miles on the left.

Green Level - This white frame residence was begun in 1864 using slave labor and was finished after the Civil War. The home has been in the same family for four generations. This area was once known as Helms.

Go approximately 3 miles farther south on Route 919, to the left on the ridge.

* **Locust Hill** - A large brick Georgian home built in 1831 reportedly by Thomas Towler, originally faced the Pittsylvania-Franklin-Botetourt Turnpike. The posterior wing is a later addition. This home is registered in the publication *Historical Homes in Virginia.*

Approximately 0.3 miles farther south at Gogginsville, turn right on Route 641, go about 2 miles to Dugwell.

The Carolina Road (Route 731)
Turn right ½ mile.

Site of **Callaway's Stage Stop**, circa 1810-1820. The present house is the third on the site.

Return to Route 641; at the junction of Routes 641 and 731 to the left was at one time

The Carolina Road - Leads one-half mile to the Blackwater Ford at the Carolina Bottoms. This is a dirt road that leads to private property and should not be traveled.

Doggetts - This area was originally known as Doggetts after Richard Doggett, who acquired land here in the 1760s. He later married the widow Evans (Rhoda) with whom George Washington had stayed on his fort inspection tour in 1756.

Continue along Route 641 less than a mile farther. Turn left on Route 734. On this road, keep left at the forks, about 2 miles on the right.

The Carolina Springs Church - A later black church, erected near the Anglican church ordered to be built in 1769 near the springs at the crossing of the Carolina Road and Chiswell Road, the road over the Blue Ridge to Wythe County.

Return to Route 641, turn left toward Callaway.

Warwick Road - Route 641, in this area, follows the original route of the road to the Warwick port town on the James River below Richmond where local products were imported from and exported to England. This road probably was constructed in 1749.

Continue on Route 641 for about 4 miles to the intersection of Route 740 on the right.

Probable Site of Fort Blackwater A blockade fort erected here, and inspected in 1756 by George Washington, for protection from Indians crossing the Blue Ridge during the French and Indian War. Here at the North and South forks of the Blackwater in the 1740s, the Rentfro family erected a mill and took up extensive landholdings.

Continuing on Route 641, on the right just before reaching Callaway.

* **Renfroes** - A Federal-style, two-story, beaded-clapboard, frame home with twin chimneys built in 1818 by Henry Tate Callaway for his bride Elizabeth Guerrant, on land inherited from his father, Colonel James Callaway. The original landowner was Richard Randolph (1775), and Thomas Doggett (1761). It stands as a sentinel of the frontier civilization that existed among our forebearers.

Continue on Route 641 through Callaway. Keep straight on Route 602. On the left.

* **Callaway-Piedmont Presbyterian Church** - Established in 1849, it was constructed of hand-baked brick. The clay was dug from the hillsides and baked in kilns by Dyerle and Callaway slaves. A heavy concentration of Scotch-Irish Presbyterians settled in this area.

Continue a few yards farther to Route 642, turn left, approximately ½ mile on the left.

Jacob Prillaman Farm - Jacob Prillaman, a German, settled here in 1772 and established the Prillaman family of Virginia. Here he erected a powder mill in the eighteenth century and had an extensive farm, now private property. The home with the ruins of a rock kitchen are believed to date from the 1780s. An original early-nineteenth-century German barn was moved from this property to the Blue Ridge Farm Museum at Ferrum College. The cemetery visible to the left of the road contains a marker that reads, "Jacob Prillaman, 1721-1796, 'First Prillaman of America.'"

Nearway Ridge (pronounced locally Nighway Ridge) - From the Prillaman Cemetery look straight out the road westward. The ridge directly ahead was ascended by the Warwick Road to cross the Blue Ridge on to the waters of the New River. Munitions were transported to Colonel Patton at present-day Blacksburg in 1752 from Williamsburg for protection of the frontier against Indians by this route.

Return to Route 602, turn left, go approximately 4 miles.

Algoma - The home here is known as Ash Grove. Algoma was once a thriving nationally known apple-producing complex established before the Civil War. Apples were regularly shipped to Buckingham Palace from this place. Several miles to the north of Algoma on Route 602 is the Adney Gap entrance to the Blue Ridge Parkway. George Washington used this route in 1756 to visit Fort Blackwater.

Return on Route 602 to Callaway, turn right on this route, travel approximately 2 miles to Route 748 and turn right, about 1 mile on the right.

* **Helms Haven** - A white frame structure with twin columns built in the 1870s by Thomas F. Helms used as a working farmhouse and at one time a store.

Continue on Route 748.

Over the mountain to the southwest on Otter Creek lived Robert Pusey, a prominent early settler and justice of the peace. He and his family were attacked by Shawnee Indians and carried captive to Detroit during the French and Indian War in 1758. When he returned he found all his property lost due to his prolonged absence.

Make a left turn at the junction of Route 640 where it joins Route 748. A short distance on this road to the right.

Phoebe Needles Conference Center - This property, owned by the Episcopal Diocese of Southwestern Virginia, was originally a school for mountain children, grades 1 through 7, taught by resident teachers and missionaries. The present stone building replaced a frame building that was destroyed by a windstorm. The complex was built in 1917 by local labor. The frame building was the "teacher's house." The school closed in 1943 and is presently used as a conference center.

Turn left on Route 640.

Saint Peter's-in-the-Mountains - An Episcopal church is on the left. The congregation dates back to 1880. The present building was constructed in 1921.

Past here turn right on Route 751 (Franklin County map shows this as Route 750). Approximately 1 mile on right.

Pigg River Primitive Baptist Church- Established in 1773, this is reportedly the earliest Baptist congregation in the county. The old cemetery has graves of many early pioneers, including Swinfield Hill, one of the original gentlemen justices of Franklin County.

Return to Route 748 and turn left. On this road about 2 miles farther you pass the remains of Easom's Mill on the right.

Easom's Mill - Built by Samuel Sloan, the grandson of James Sloan, who had a mill on Maggodee Creek near present-day Wirtz in the 1750s. A delightful book by great-great-great grandson Raymond Sloan, entitled *Uncle Easom's Grist Mill*, popularizes this area of western Franklin County.

Continue on Route 748. This road is locally known as

Turner's Creek Road - Named for Roger Turner who took up land here in 1747.

Cross Route 752, continuing on Route 748 about ½ mile on the hill to the right.

Brick House on Turner's Creek - Circa 1810, a primitive, tall brick home now painted white. This home features a German "Hall and Parlor" design. Reportedly first owned by a Mr. Thompson and sold to a Mr. Jamison in 1840, who served in the Confederate cavalry. Later passed through the Drewry and Hale families.

Past here, approximately 1½ miles you reach Route 40, turn left ½ mile to Ferrum College.

* **Blue Ridge Farm Museum of Ferrum College** - Recreated Blue Ridge farmsteads both of 1800 and 1900 vintage farms depicting the history and culture of early Virginia settlements. Open weekends during June, July, and August and May 17 and 18, 1986, with costumed guides and interpreters - a working farm museum. Preservation and interpretation of the natural culture and music of the Blue Ridge are ongoing projects of the Blue Ridge Institute.

Ferrum College - Established 1914 by the Methodist church. The college is now a four-year institution. The landmark at the entrance is the Vaughn Memorial Chapel. Above and behind the chapel stands the President's House.

East on Route 40 ½ mile on the right opposite the Ferrum Fire and Rescue Squad.

* **Saint James Methodist Church** - Organized and built during the Conference Year of 1897 under the leadership of the Reverend C.E. Blankenship. Bricks for the structure were made a few hundred yards away by Marshall Haynes who also laid the brick. I.M. Menefee was the carpenter.

The Blue Ridge Farm Museum of the Blue Ridge Institute on the campus of Ferrum College portrays life as it would have appeared locally on an 1800 vintage German farmstead. The James Bottom House (c. 1806) and its dependencies, from near Sydnorsville and the Prillaman barn (c. 1814) were moved to the Farm Museum and reconstructed.

* **Ferrum Craft Shop** offers a variety of hand-crafted items, most of them made by craftsmen in the Franklin County area. Open Tuesday through Saturday, 9 .AM. to 5 P.M.

An alternate route may be taken here. One may proceed to Rocky Mount (10 miles) via Route 40 east, there to intersect with Route 220. Information on Rocky Mount will be included at the conclusion of this tour. Along this route to Rocky Mount at Waidsboro, the Carolina Road crossed and proceeded south along Route 607 to the top of Thornton Mountain.

In Ferrum, proceed southwest on Route 623 about 2½ miles to the junction of Route 778 and turn left. One-half mile on the left.

Republican Primitive Baptist Church, established in 1877.

One-half mile beyond Republican Church on the right.

Captain Waddy James' Place - Captain James served in the 57th Virginia Regiment Infantry during the Civil War and later in the House of Delegates (1874-1875, 1877-1878).

In former days, the surrounding countryside was well known for its active moonshining.

Continue on Route 778, turn left on Route 605 through Henry, turn right crossing railroad tracks to continue on Route 605 a short distance across the Henry County line on the right.

\+ **Captain Turner's House** is located on the Franklin-Henry County line. This two-story, four-room log cabin of hand-hewn pine logs was built in the late 1700s by Shadrack Turner. A magnolia tree stands in the yard where it is purported that "General Stoneman's troops camped to give his wounded soldiers a chance to mend" in April 1865.

Return to Henry, take Route 605 northward to Route 220 about 5 miles. About 1 mile along this road on the left.

Town Creek Primitive Baptist Church, organized in 1775.

Just before reaching Route 220 on the right is **Molly's Knob**, named for Molly Hickey, wife of John Hickey, an early merchant who had extensive landholdings in Franklin County in the 1740s.

Turn left on Route 220. Travel north on Route 220 approximately 5 miles. Just past the intersection of Route 724.

Site of Mr. Sydnor's Ordinary and Store - Original log home owned by John and Sarah Doughton on land inherited from her father, John Martin. Later Mr. Beverly Sydnor opened an ordinary here in the 1830s and operated a well-known store for many years. The store and home survived until the mid-twentieth century.

Continue north on Route 220 to the intersection of Route 619, turn right, go 2.2 miles to Franklin County Recreational Park, across the road from this point.

Ashpone Tavern, a well-known eighteenth-century tavern once stood here frequented by Patrick Henry and Andrew Jackson. Route 619 through this area was once the **Danville Turnpike** (Pittsylvania-Franklin-Botetourt Turnpike). Here the road follows the original turnpike established in the 1830s under the famous Claudius Crozet, state engineer who previously had served under Napoleon. The road was heavily used by drovers for carrying livestock to market.

Approximately 1 mile past the Franklin County Recreation Park, immediately past the intersection of Route 724, the field on the right.

Muster Grounds, Company G., 57th Virginia Infantry Civil War training grounds for the Ladies Guard of Franklin County in 1861. The 57th and 24th Virginia Infantry with companies from Franklin County fought throughout the war and advanced to the farthermost point during Pickett's charge at Gettysburg in 1863 in spite of staggering losses - "The High Water Mark of The Confederacy."

Continue on Route 619 past Sontag in this area.

Chestnut Creek and Chestnut Mountain. Robert Hodges had a cabin on Chestnut Creek near its mouth in 1746. At this time buffalo wallows and buffalo paths were noted along it. Beyond, on top of Chestnut Mountain mica mines were developed during the early twentieth century on the plantation established by Sterling Cooper, a revolutionary veteran of Yorktown who settled in Franklin County in 1800.

Continue on Route 619 to Snow Creek. Turn right on Route 890, go south about 2 miles to Route 717, turn right, go about ¾ mile, turn left on Route 933, first home on left.

\+ **Captain Lee Place** - This three-story brick home was built in the 1830s by Peter Finney as a wedding gift to his daughter who married Captain Charles C. Lee, the proprietor of the big Springs Resort in Montgomery County. The bricks were made by slaves on the place. The old cemetery with impressive stones is located nearby under a large oak tree.

Return to Route 890, turn left and head northeast through Snow Creek about 9 miles to the junction of Route 646. Approximately 2 miles farther on Route 890, a sign indicating the location, a short distance to the right. The sign on the road reads: ***Chapel Primitive Baptist Church.***

Chapel Primitive Baptist Church - Built by the vestry of Camden Parish in 1769 as an Anglican Church to replace the chapel of 1752 on Snow Creek. The vestry of Camden Parish included Hugh Innes, original gentleman justice of the first Franklin County Court; John Donelson, who established the ironworks at present Rocky Mount in 1773; and John Pigg, for whom Pigg River is named. According to church records, a large number of slaves were members of the church. Acquired by the Primitive Baptists in 1823, it is purportedly the oldest church building in Franklin County.

Continue north on Route 890 about 1½ miles, turn right on Route 629, travel 1.8 miles to Route 858, turn left about ½ mile to

The Snow Creek Mill has been in the LaPrade family for three generations.

The Snow Creek Mill - Mr. Page LaPrade's grandfather bought the Snow Creek Mill in 1838; in 1848 he constructed the present mill after the old mill burned. Only recently have operations ceased at the old grist mill.

Retrace to Route 890, turn right and continue north about 2½ miles, after crossing Pigg River, at the top of the hill, on the left.

Mountain View - This commodious brick dwelling was built by Dr. George Clements in the early nineteenth century. The prominent physician had his office to the right in the front yard. He also operated an extensive tobacco plantation. His three sons were murdered in the Witcher-Clements feud of 1860 and are buried in a single grave behind the house.

Turn around and retrace south on Route 890 to Route 646. Turn right about 1 mile on the left.

"Halfway House" - Brown House - Once served as a stage stop halfway between Big Lick (Roanoke) and Danville and as the home of W.A. Brown. A tobacco factory nearby made Brown Mule Tobacco. The tobacco manufactory was sold, moved south, and eventually became incorporated in the R.J. Reynolds Tobacco Company.

Across the road in the field to the east, once stood **Washington Dickinson's Store**, the old store made infamous by the Witcher-Clements feud of 1860.

Continue west on Route 646 to the junction of Route 718, turn right and go to Route 40. Turn right, go approximately 1 mile east on Route 40 and turn right on Route 673, go ½ mile.

\+ **The Holland Homeplace** - A Federal-style brick residence built in 1798 by John Spotswood Burwell. A corn bin, chicken house, blacksmith shop, and original kitchen chimney are still on the grounds.

Approximately 2 miles farther on Route 673 on the left.

Captain Frederick Rives Place - Captain Rives, a revolutionary war captain and prominent citizen of early Franklin County lived here. The limestone quarry used to supply the Washington Iron Works was located on this property near Pigg River. Across Pigg River the road leading to Rocky Mount (the Doe Run Road) was originally called the Limestone Road.

Turn around and return to Route 40, turn right on Route 40, 1.3 miles to Route 834 and turn left, 2.4 miles to Route 674 on the right a short distance.

Bethel Primitive Baptist Church - Built in 1824. The congregation was organized in 1805 as the Church of Christ of Bethel, founded by Joel Preston, Joseph Pedigo, and Wilson Turner, who formed a presbytery appointed by the Strawberry District Association.

Continue on Route 674 for about ½ mile to the entrance of a private driveway on the left.

John M. Holland Plantation Home -Designed by an English firm and built approximately 1810 of brick construciton. The original plantation was more than one thousand acres and was owned by John Meador Holland, once a gentleman justice of Franklin County, a representative in the Virginia House of Delegates from 1820 to 1836, and a major in the War of 1812. Brick left over from the house was used to complete the Bethel Church.

Return to Route 834 and turn right.

Continue on Route 834 about 5 miles to the intersection of Route 670, turn right, go approximately 3 miles, turn right on Route 668, proceed ¾ mile and turn right on Route 944, 1/3 mile on the left.

The Smith Place - Original land grant and homeplace of Colonel John Smith, one of the first gentleman justices in 1786. His original cabin was near the shores of the lake, a later cabin now in ruins is midway to the highway, and the present white Victorian home is the third Smith residence on the plantation.

Turn around and travel Route 944 to Route 670, turn right, go about 1 mile, on right.

Trading Tom Dudley Homeplace - a two-story brick residence built in the early nineteenth century by a noted slave trader.

Proceed 1 mile via Route 670, turn right on Route 1303 to a cul-de-sac on the lake.

Twin Chimneys - The chimneys of Gwynn Dudley's original house, 1795. Dudley was a revolutionary war soldier and father of Trading Tom.

Return to Route 670, turn left, travel approximately 3 miles, turn right on Route 668, cross Gills Creek, and turn right on Route 833 to Route 616, turn right, follow signs to Bernard's Landing.

Bernard's Landing - A luxurious complex of townhouses, conference center, and restaurant offering residential and recreational opportunities by Smith Mountain Lake.

Retrace on Route 616, following signs to Waterfront.

Waterfront I & II - Luxurious lake homes, townhouses, condominiums, and country club. The area's recent growth shows dramatic contrast to the rural agricultural pursuits indigenous to the area for over two hundred years. Near here, the **Town of Lawrence** was proposed with 100 lots offered for sale in 1818. Plans were to make this the county seat of a new county to be derived from Franklin, Bedford, and Pittsylvania (Smith Mountain Lake area) but the town never materialized.

Proceed northwestward on Route 616 to the junction of Route 122. Turn right a short distance on the right.

+ **Holland-Duncan House** - This Federal style home was begun by Thomas Holland in 1798 and completed by Asa Holland in the 1820s. A smokehouse, well house, and guest house are standing on the grounds. The Holland-Duncan House provided lodging, at one time for students at nearby Halesford Academy, a prominent private school of the late nineteenth century. A Confederate post office was housed adjacent to the main house during the war. The home was the dwelling of William E. and Sallie Holland Duncan who founded the coeducational school in 1874. It is now a bed and breakfast home.

Proceed north along Route 122 approximately 2.7 miles to a large white frame house on the left, the last before Hales Ford Bridge.

The Hook-Powell-Moorman House Near here stood John Hook's Store, built in 1784. Around 1850 part of the store was brought across the road to serve as a dependency behind the main house. Hook, a contentious Scotsman, carried on an extensive trade and is well known as the plaintiff in the "Beef Case" in which he sued the state for taking his beef to supply the troops at Yorktown. Patrick Henry defended the state of Virginia and with his oratory at its best heaped ridicule on Hook. The white structure adjacent to the remains of the store behind the house was the birthplace of Congressman Adam Clayton Powell's father in 1865.

Turn around and proceed toward Rocky Mount on Route 122. About 5 miles on the left.

+ **Booker T. Washington Birthplace** - This national monument was once the Burroughs plantation where Booker T. Washington was born a slave. The Visitor's Center is open daily along with the Environmental Education and Cultural Center and a small picnic area. Washington became a great American educator, presidential advisor, and leader of his people.

Approximately 4 miles farther on the left.

+ **Olden Oakes** - A Federal-style house, much altered and improved recently, with twenty-two rooms. The site is well known as Taylor's Store and dates from the early nineteenth century. An old granary is standing on the property. The highway (122) in this area is thought to correspond to the original route of the Warwick Road of 1749.

Continue southwest on Route 122 to the junction of Route 116, the Jubal Early Highway. Turn right and travel about 2 miles, turn right on Route 688, travel approximately 2 miles on this road bearing left at Route 972 keeping on Route 688. Just past Gills Creek.

The Taylor-Price Home - Jonathan Richardson, one of the original gentlemen justices of Franklin County, patented the land in 1771. The commodious brick residence was erected around 1825 by Christopher Taylor.

Return to Route 116, approximately 6 miles farther on the right.

Two historic properties on private property and not easily accessible, hence not included on the tour: The **Jubal Early Birthplace**, a private drive just south of the north fork of Gills Creek. The large clapboard home situated on a hill along this rocky drive incorporates the log structure of Joab Early's house. He was the father of General Jubal Early. Just north of Gills Creek, a private drive leads to the **Lovelace Place**, erected by Moses Booth about 1840. The plantation was originally the Jeremiah Early plantation with the family cemetery nearby containing General Jubal Early's war-horse as well.

Return to Route 122 via 116, turn right toward Rocky Mount, about 1 mile, turn right on Route 697, go approximately 2 miles, turn right on Route 687 to Maggodee Creek.

+ **Piedmont Mill (Clements Mill)** - Built in 1870 by Albert Martin and operated since 1922 by Ben Lewis Clements and descendants. In 1922 there were 17 such mills running in Franklin County. Today it is the only water wheel operating in the county. Open most Saturday and Sunday afternoons.

Return to Route 697, turn right from this junction to the junction of Route 699 to the left of the road.

Site of Old Germantown - Once a thriving town with a post office, school, church, homes, and ordinaries established in the 1790s. It flourished for approximately fifty years but has entirely disappeared.

Continue along Route 697 to Route 220, turn left on Route 220 South approximately 2 miles to the Blackwater Bridge.

Indian Fish Trap - Approximately fifty yards upstream from the bridge one may see the remains of a Gothic-shaped rock dam used by Indians as a fishtrap. It was mentioned in 1788 as a landmark on a deed for the area.

Proceed south on Route 220, take the second exit to Rocky Mount, turn left on Route 40 west. Pass the Franklin County High School, bear left on Tanyard Road past the shopping center and directly in front of the National Guard Armory.

Tanyard Cemetery - The burial ground of Robert Hill with the oldest dated stone known in the county. Hill was one of the earliest settlers in the Rocky Mount area, had two sons killed locally by Indians and died in 1778. His son-in-law Walter Bernard, a revolutionary war veteran, who established the Carron ironworks in the 1700s and later the Tanyard near the cemetery, is also buried here along with many families associated with nineteenth-century Rocky Mount.

Proceed on Tanyard Road to the top of the hill, turn left on Maple Avenue. On the left of the corner of Maple and Church Streets.

* **The Caleb Tate House** - A Greek Revival house surrounded by magnificent old boxwood. It was rebuilt around 1856 using the original walls of the Tate House, circa 1812, which burned. Tate was clerk of the court of Franklin County for many years.

Mount Pleasant - That part of present-day Rocky Mount east of Maple Avenue and north of the Courthouse Square containing twenty-five acres was deeded in 1805 as a separate town adjacent to Rocky Mount. Many lots were developed and the two towns were incorporated in 1873 as Rocky Mount.

On the left, the next house on Maple past Court Street.

Woods-Mead House - Circa 1840, on the Virginia Landmarks Register and the National Register of Historic Places. The original owner was Morrison Meade and the original use reportedly was as a Presbyterian manse and later as a physician's office.

Turn onto Court Street, one block to Main Street, turn left, down one block.

Courthouse Square - At this location since 1786. This is the third courthouse building on the site and was dedicated in 1913. The old clerk's office behind the courthouse dates to 1860.

Continue down Main Street one block, turn right on Floyd Avenue past

Robert Hill built this fortified stone dwelling near Rocky Mount around 1750 where Indians killed his son while standing in the doorway. The home was much enlarged later but was destroyed by fire about 30 years ago leaving the original stone "Old Fort" still visible.

Presbyterian Church - Built in 1877. Across the street on the site of Franklin Memorial Hospital once stood the Taliaferro-Nelson House, erected about 1818 and the home of Franklin County's first physician, Dr. Richard Taliaferro, nephew of George Wythe, of Williamsburg.

Down Floyd Avenue, on the left at the intersection of Franklin Street.

The Grove - A handsome Greek Revival residence built in the mid-nineteenth century by John S. Hale. The house was then the center of a tobacco plantation with the large tobacco factory on the site of the present-day Oak Manor Apartments. It is difficult to see this house from the street.

Return to Main Street, turn right, down South Main Street to Lawndale Drive (third street on right), turn right, the first house on the left.

* **The Farm (at the Furnace)** - Built in 1779 (with two additions one in 1856 and the other in 1979) by Colonel James Callaway. It was the ironmaster's house of the Washington Iron Works. It served also as an ordinary (1784-1786) and as the site of the first Franklin County Court (January-March 1786). Originally an 18,000-acre iron plantation.

Return to Main Street, turn right down South Main Street past Old Furnace Road, take the first driveway to the right. Park, to the right and walk the trail across the ravine and down the hill, on the right.

* **Washington Iron Furnace** - Erected in 1779. The blast furnace was the central element of the large iron plantation, which supplied pig iron and castings as far south as Georgia.

Return to Main Street, turn right on Main Street, proceed to the stop light, turn right on Scuffling Hill Road to the top of the hill, turn left on Glenwood Drive, about .2 miles to the left turn down entrance to Christian Heritage Academy. Across the driveway from Christian Heritage Academy.

* **Ruins of Robert Hill's Fort** - This fortified stone home was built about 1750 by pioneer Robert Hill. According to tradition, a son standing in the doorway was killed by Indians. Another was killed by a panther on Scuffling Hill. The structure was greatly enlarged by frame construction later but burned around thirty years ago leaving the original fort ruins exposed.

We hope your tour of Franklin County will be most enjoyable and enlightening. May it lead to a greater appreciation of the natural beauty and the historical legacy that abound in Franklin County. □

JEANNE H. BERNARD *has lived in Franklin County for nearly forty years. Born in Pulaski County, she is descended from one of the earliest families in that county and is a relative of one of the original gentlemen justices of that county. Mrs. Bernard has been very active in her church, garden club, and many community and civic organizations. Her outstanding service to Franklin County was recognized when she became the recipient of the 1984 annual William Cooper Award for Outstanding Community Service. Mrs. Bernard is a member of the Franklin County Bicentennial Commission.*

NOTES

NOTES

NOTES